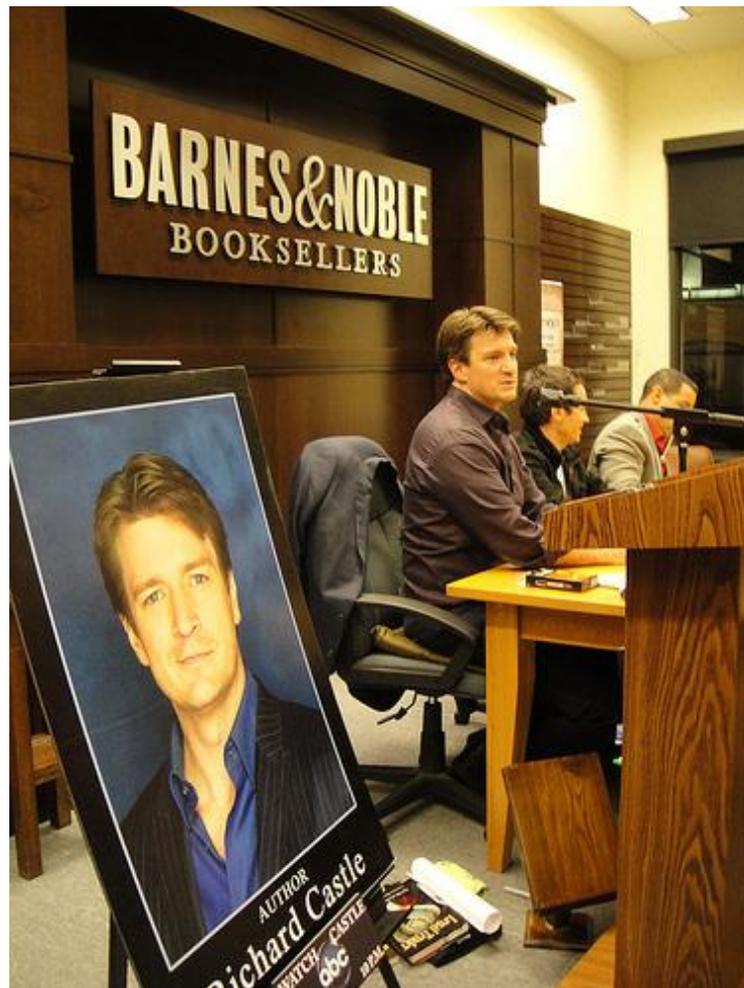


Master-scriptie voor Film- en Televisiewetenschap aan de faculteit der Geesteswetenschappen aan de Universiteit Utrecht

Multimediale marketing strategieën en persoonlijke betrokkenheid in CASTLE



Naam: Sanne Heijnen

Studentnummer: 3218627

Begeleider: A.C.N van Beusekom

Datum: Januari 2013 (blok 2)

Inhoudsopgave

Inleiding.....	3
Theoretisch kader: identificatie en/of para-sociale interactie?	5
Methode	17
Verwerven en keuze respondenten.....	20
Analyse.....	27
Werkelijkheid	27
Relatie van de lezer met een karakter	37
Conclusie	59
Discussie.....	65
Literatuurlijst.....	67
Bijlagen.....	69

Inleiding

“Meet Richard Castle. He’s a New York Times best-selling author. And he’s not real.”¹

Richard Castle is een fictief personage uit de televisieserie CASTLE van ABC.² En er is iets aparts aan de hand met Richard Castle. Hoewel hij namelijk een fictief personage is lijkt hij toch echt te leven. Hij facebookt, twittert, heeft een eigen website en brengt zijn eigen boeken uit. Door de makers wordt er alles aangedaan om kijkers te laten geloven dat Richard Castle een echt persoon is en geen fictief personage. Deze nieuwe marketingstrategie die de zender ABC heeft toegepast, lijkt een duidelijk effect te hebben op de kijkers van de serie. Castle’s boeken zijn allemaal bestsellers geworden en mensen staan in de rij om een handtekening van Richard Castle te bemachtigen. De marketingstrategie van ABC heeft tot gevolg dat het publiek van CASTLE erg dichtbij de serie en de personages uit de serie staat: ze hebben het gevoel Richard Castle en de andere personages echt te kennen. Dit zorgt voor een aparte band, een persoonlijke betrokkenheid, tussen de kijkers van de serie (en ook de lezers van de boeken) en de fictieve personages uit de serie. In deze scriptie zal ik deze bijzondere band die tussen kijker en fictieve personages uit de serie gecreëerd wordt, onderzoeken en analyseren.

De basis van mijn onderzoek zal bestaan uit een analyse van reacties van de kijkers van de serie (reacties die de betrokkenheid van de kijker met een fictief personage uit de serie weergeven). Deze reacties zijn te vinden op de vele messageboards en discussieforums van de serie. In mijn onderzoek zal ik gaan bekijken hoe de betrokkenheid van de kijkers met de personages van de serie op de forums naar voren komt en welke verschillende dimensies hierin te zijn onderscheiden. Ik wil niet alleen onderzoeken in welke mate er sprake is van betrokkenheid met de karakters uit de serie, en welke vormen dit aanneemt,

¹Fictional author “writes” real book: Richard Castle releases “Heat Wave.” *Wait, What?* (2009) <http://www.ozarksunbound.com/fictional-author-writes-real-book-richard-castle-releases-heat-wave-wait-what-cultural-critique/7047> bezocht op 13-04-2012

² Castle. Mak. Andrew Marlowe, act. Nathan Fillion, Stana Katic. ABC 2009-2011.

maar ook analyseren hoe de bijzondere marketing strategie van CASTLE van invloed is op de betrokkenheid van de kijkers. Om dit te realiseren heb ik de volgende twee onderzoeksvragen opgesteld:

Welke vormen van persoonlijke betrokkenheid met de fictieve personages uit de serie CASTLE zijn er in de reacties van de kijkers op de message boards te onderscheiden en hoe verhouden die zich tot elkaar?

Op welke wijze versterkt de multimediale marketing strategie van tie-in's de betrokkenheid van de kijker met de personages en gebeurtenissen in de serie televisieserie CASTLE?

Voordat de analyse wordt uitgewerkt, volgt eerst een uiteenzetting van een selectie van de reeds bestaande theorieën omtrent de relatie tussen kijker en fictieve personages. Vervolgens worden de keuzes en beslissingen over de onderzoeksopzet, de keuze van de mediaproducten en de keuze voor respondenten verantwoord. Daarna volgt de inhoudelijke analyse van de reacties van de kijkers, en daarmee worden de onderzoeksresultaten ingebed in de wetenschappelijke ideeën en theorieën. Ten slotte wordt in de conclusie een koppeling gemaakt tussen de onderzoeksresultaten en theoretische concepten, en zal in de discussie worden gereflecteerd op het onderzoek en het onderzoeksproces.

Theoretisch kader: identificatie en/of para-sociale interactie?

Voor mijn onderzoek is het noodzakelijk om te definiëren wat ik onder de persoonlijke betrokkenheid van een kijker met een fictief personage uit een televisieserie versta, omdat het natuurlijk een erg abstract begrip is. Onder persoonlijke betrokkenheid versta ik kort gezegd het vormen van een persoonlijke band met een fictief personage. De inhoud van deze band en de sterkte daarvan zullen per persoon onderling verschillen en is bij niemand hetzelfde. Onder persoonlijke betrokkenheid schaar ik een groot aantal andere concepten die al vaker in de mediawetenschappen gebruikt zijn. Identificatie, para-sociale interactie, flow, transportatie, het waarderen of hebben van gevoelens voor een personage en imitatie zijn allemaal begrippen die onder persoonlijke betrokkenheid vallen. Voor dit onderzoek zal ik me voornamelijk op twee van deze concepten focussen: identificatie en para-sociale interactie (PSI). Ik leg mijn focus juist op deze twee concepten omdat deze naar mijn mening het best van toepassing zijn op de band die gecreëerd wordt tussen kijker en personage in de serie CASTLE. De beredenering voor deze keuze zal volgen uit de behandeling van verschillende al bestaande theorieën over deze concepten.

Er is in zijn totaal al veel geschreven over concepten die te maken hebben met het creëren van een persoonlijke band tussen kijker en personage. Het is niet mijn intentie om nu ieder concept apart te gaan bespreken en analyseren op welke manier het van toepassing is op mijn casus. Wel zal ik bespreken op welke manier deze concepten samenhangen en verschillen van elkaar. Daarbij zal ik het meest besproken concept, identificatie als basis hanteren, en daar vanuit de andere concepten erbij betrekken.

Ook over identificatie is al enorm veel geschreven op wetenschappelijk gebied. Een van de eerste wetenschappers die getracht heeft identificatie te analyseren en definiëren is de Franse psychoanalyticus Jacques Lacan. Hij brengt de term identificatie in verband met de ontwikkelingsfase van een baby (ook wel spiegelfase genoemd). Hij stelt dat een kind wordt geboren met de ervaring van gemis en dat men vervolgens zal proberen om dit gemis te begrijpen en

overkomen door middel van het spiegelen aan de moeder.³ En ook specifiek binnen de televisiewetenschappen is er al veel aandacht aan identificatie besteed. De Amerikaanse communicatiewetenschapper Jonathan Cohen heeft veel onderzoek gedaan naar de identificatie van kijkers met fictionele karakters, en is dan ook een van de belangrijkste spelers in de ontwikkeling van de theorie omtrent identificatie met mediakarakters.

Cohen onderstreept dat er een duidelijk onderscheid gemaakt moet worden tussen identificatie en andere typen reacties die een kijker op een media tekst kan hebben.⁴ Cohen geeft zelf de volgende definitie van identificatie:

“When reading a novel or watching a film or a television program, audience members often become absorbed in the plot and identify with the characters portrayed. Unlike the more distanced mode of reception—that of spectatorship—identification is a mechanism through which audience members experience reception and interpretation of the text from the inside, as if the events were happening to them.”⁵

Hij stelt dus dat tijdens de identificatie met een mediakarakter, kijkers het gevoel hebben dat de gebeurtenissen die het karakter meemaakt ook met hen gebeuren (zij nemen de gevoelens van het karakter over). De kijkers bevinden zich tijdelijk in de tekst zelf. Bij identificatie staat de kijker even tijdelijk in iemands anders zijn schoenen, en bekijkt hij/zij de wereld door die persoon zijn ogen. Daarbij moet identificatie als een ervaring gezien worden, waarin de doelen en de identiteit van een media karakter overgenomen worden.⁶

Cohen beschrijft in detail de eigenschappen van identificatie. Identificatie is vluchtig en verschilt in intensiteit. Een persoon die zich met een media karakter identificeert raakt zijn eigen identiteit tijdelijk even kwijt. De doelen van het geïdentificeerde karakter worden volledig overgenomen. Belangrijk daarbij is

³ Peter van Beneden, “Viewer ‘identification’ with media characters in television and film fiction” Proefschrift voor de Universiteit van Western Australia (1998), 2-3.

⁴ Jonathan Cohen, “Defining Identification: A Theoretical Look at the Identification of Audiences With Media Characters” *Mass Communication and Society* 4 (2001): 245.

⁵ Cohen, 245.

⁶ Cohen, 250.

dat er met het karakter mee wordt gevoeld in plaats van voor het karakter wordt gevoeld (feeling with versus feeling about).⁷

Cohen bespreekt ook het einde van identificatie. Het einde van de identificatie met een media karakter ligt volgens hem altijd op het moment dat de kijker zich weer bewust wordt van zijn eigen identiteit. Dit kan door verschillende dingen worden veroorzaakt, bijvoorbeeld door een externe stimulans (de telefoon gaat), een tekstuele stimulans (de kijker wordt opeens binnen de mediatekst direct aangesproken) of het einde van het verhaal of de aflevering.⁸ Ik zou hier zelf graag aan toe willen voegen dat ik het hier zelf niet mee eens ben en dat identificatie niet per se een einde hoeft te hebben wat gerelateerd is aan een aflevering. Ik kan me daarmee meer vinden in de theorie van Victor Costello die stelde dat er ook sprake kan zijn van "lange termijn identificatie". Dit houdt in dat na het kijken van een televisieprogramma de kijker toch cognitief verbonden blijft aan het karakter (door middel van fantasie).⁹

Cohen heeft het ook over de dimensies van identificatie. Hij stelt dat bij het onderzoek doen naar identificatie met media karakters, er altijd gekeken moet worden of een of meerdere van deze dimensies aanwezig zijn:

1. Het voelen van empathie of het delen van de gevoelens van het karakter (bijvoorbeeld blij, droevig of bang met het karakter zijn, en niet voor het karakter).
2. Het perspectief met het mediakarakter moet gedeeld worden door de kijker. Dit kan gemeten worden door te kijken naar de manier waarop de kijker het gevoel heeft het mediakarakter en zijn/haar gedragsmotivaties te begrijpen.
3. De doelen van het karakter moeten gedeeld worden.

⁷ Cohen, 251.

⁸ Cohen, 252.

⁹ Victor Costello, "Interactivity and the "Cyber-Fan": an Exploration of Audience Involvement within the Electronic Fan Culture of the Internet" Proefschrift voor de Universiteit van Tennessee, 58 - 59.

4. De mate waarop het zelfbewustzijn en de eigen identiteit van de kijker verdwijnen. En omdat identificatie tijdelijk is, moet dit gemeten worden in termen van intensiteit en frequentie.

Dus des te meer iemand in de tekst geabsorbeerd wordt, zich kan inleven en het karakter begrijpt en haar of zijn doelen overneemt, des te meer er gezegd kan worden dat er identificatie plaatsvindt.¹⁰

Cohen pleit zelf voor een duidelijk onderscheid tussen identificatie en gerelateerde concepten. Volgens Cohen is dat onderscheid in de bestaande literatuur over de relatie tussen kijker en personage niet goed uitgewerkt:

“With very few exceptions, the existing literature on the relationships between media audiences and media characters (whether not the term identification is used) has failed to distinguish among various forms of audience responses to characters. Rather, researchers lumped the different responses together, focusing entirely on the intensity of feelings toward the character and using various names and labels interchangeably: identification, PSI, and so forth. [...] Thus, even when scholars carefully defines identification in conceptual terms and went on to measure identification , the conceptual and operational definitions often did not match. While defining identification as “being in someone else’s shoes,” they measured liking, similarity, or desire to imitate.”¹¹

¹⁰ Cohen, 256.

¹¹ Cohen,. 254.

Waar dus bijna altijd gesteld wordt dat we hier met verschillende concepten te maken hebben, worden deze concepten toch vaak door elkaar gehaald. Zelfs Cohen die deze observatie maakt, heeft er moeite mee om in woorden uit te leggen wat het onderlinge verschil nu exact is:

“[...] a satisfactory definition of identification should attempt to explain the relationship between identification and other ways that audiences relate to characters (e.g. attitudes and emotions).”¹²

Cohen probeert vervolgens uit te leggen wat het verschil is tussen de verschillende concepten maar komt er zelf ook niet helemaal uit. Blijkbaar is er toch zo'n sterke onderlinge samenhang tussen de concepten dat het apart definiëren ervan als zeer moeilijk wordt ervaren. Cohen is een van de eerste die daar wel een poging tot heeft gedaan. Om het verschil tussen deze verschillende concepten en de gevolgen daarvan aan te duiden, heeft hij de volgende tabel opgesteld (tabel 1).¹³

¹² Cohen, 250.

¹³ Ibidem, 252.

Tabel 1

Comparing Identification With Similar Concepts				
	<i>Identification</i>	<i>Parasocial Interaction</i>	<i>Liking, Similarity, Affinity</i>	<i>Imitation</i>
<i>Nature of process</i>	Emotional and cognitive, alters state of awareness	Interactional, (para)social	Attitude	Behavior
<i>Basis</i>	Understanding and empathy	Attraction	Perceptions of character and self	Modeling
<i>Positioning of viewer</i>	As character	As self	As self	As learner (self as other)
<i>Associated phenomena</i>	Absorption in text, emotional release	Attachment to character and text, keeping company	Fandom, realism	Learning, reinforcement
<i>Theoretical roots</i>	Psychoanalysis, film studies, social psychology	Psychology, interpersonal communication	Social psychology	Experimental psychology, social learning theory

Wat Cohen hier belangrijk vind om te vermelden is dat deze vier concepten niet alleen los van elkaar gezien kunnen worden. Deze concepten staan allemaal met elkaar in verband. Zo kan identificatie met een karakter leiden tot parasociale interactie, sympathie, gelijkenis en affiniteit en imitatie (en vice versa).¹⁴ Maar deze concepten zijn volgens Cohen wel duidelijk verschillend van elkaar. Imitatie is volgens Cohen de behoefte om personages na te doen. Men bestudeert de eigenschappen van een karakter (zowel innerlijk als uiterlijk) en kopieert dit.¹⁵ Het leuk vinden, similariteit hebben (verschillen of overeenkomsten vinden tussen jezelf en de personages) en affiniteit hebben (een verwantschap voelen met de personages) duiden volgens Cohen op een waardeoordeel die kijkers

¹⁴ Cohen, 252 - 254.

¹⁵ Ibidem 254.

maken vanuit hun eigen perspectief. Bij identificatie is er geen eigen perspectief en wordt het perspectief van het personage overgenomen.¹⁶

Para Sociale Interactie (PSI) heeft volgens Cohen een duidelijke interactieve component die bij identificatie niet aanwezig is.¹⁷ PSI bestaat volgens Cohen uit het vormen van een vriendschap met een personage waarbij een bepaalde sociale afstand aanwezig is (daarbij blijft je wel altijd jezelf). Bij identificatie is juist een extreme absorptie (transportatie of het bevinden in een flow) vereist die een intense emotionele ervaring veroorzaakt.¹⁸ Dit is echter het enige wat Cohen over de relatie en verschillen tussen identificatie en PSI weergeeft. Dit is om een vergelijking te maken met identificatie zeker niet voldoende en bovendien onderbouwt Cohen zijn theorie over PSI niet goed. Om er wat meer over te kunnen zeggen en op een goede manier te kunnen vergelijken met identificatie, wil ik graag teruggrijpen naar de bedenkers van de term PSI, Horton & Wohl.¹⁹ Zij stellen dat PSI het vormen van een continue relatie met een karakter inhoudt. Die relatie is te omschrijven als vriendschappelijk en intiem. Daarbij speelt de fantasie van de kijker een belangrijke rol (fantaseren hoe de vriendschap met een karakter zou zijn en welke hoe deze vriendschap er inhoudelijk uit zou zien).²⁰ Hoe langer deze vriendschapsband bestaat, hoe hechter de relatie wordt:

“ In time, the devotee [...] comes to believe that he ‘knows’ the persona more intimately and profoundly than others do; that he ‘understands’ his character and appreciates his values and motives.”²¹

Horton & Wohl stellen wel dat hoe intens en langdurig deze relatie ook is, hij altijd gekenmerkt wordt door het eenzijdige karakter. Ze noemen het groei zonder fundamentele ontwikkeling.²² Vanuit het perspectief van de makers van

¹⁶ Cohen, 254.

¹⁷ Ibidem, 253.

¹⁸ Ibidem, 253.

¹⁹ Donald Horton & Richard Wohl, “Mass communication and para-social interaction: observations of intimacy at a distance” *Psychiatry* 19(3): 215

²⁰ Ibidem.

²¹ Ibidem, 217.

²² Horton & Wohl, 217.

een product of de acteurs die daaraan verbonden zijn, is het volgens Horton & Wohl de bedoeling om een zo realistisch mogelijke indruk te maken. De kijker moet het gevoel hebben direct in het leven van de personages te mogen kijken. De grens tussen fictie en realiteit moet zoveel mogelijk vervaagd worden. De kijker moet op een gegeven moment het idee krijgen onderdeel te zijn van het verhaal. Om dat gevoel van erbij horen voor de kijker te versterken kan een acteur bijvoorbeeld ervoor kiezen om uit het format van de serie te stappen en zich in andere velden te gaan begeven (door bijvoorbeeld de kijker direct aan te spreken maar wel in zijn of haar rol te blijven). De makers van een serie moeten als het ware de kijkers leren hoe ze met de personages om moeten gaan en in welke situaties ze de personages kunnen verwachten. De kijker moet op zijn beurt leren hoe ze met de vriendschappelijke rol om moeten gaan en wat van hen verwacht wordt.²³

Een van de belangrijkste kenmerken van PSI is volgens Horton & Wohl het creëren van een illusie van intimiteit. De kijker heeft het gevoel het karakter te begrijpen en waardeert zijn of haar motieven en gevoelens. De kijker creëert een plaatje van wie de karakters zijn en welke rol zij daarin spelen. De kijker zal het karakter vaak ook onvoorwaardelijk steunen. Andere media worden door de makers van een serie gebruikt om de illusie van intimiteit te waarborgen.

²³ Horton & Wohl, 218- 221.

Het artikel van Horton & Wohl is vandaag de dag nog steeds relevant als het gaat om de relatie tussen kijker en fictieve personages. De theorie van Horton & Wohl is daarom ook veel gebruikt en verder uitgewerkt door mediawetenschappers. Door Cole & Leets, zij beschrijven bijvoorbeeld drie eigenschappen, waaraan een kijker die een PSI relatie heeft met een personage te herkennen is:

1. De kijker zal proberen de afstand tussen henzelf en het personage te verkleinen (hierbij hoort ook het verlangen om contact met het personage op te nemen)
2. De aanwezigheid van het personage moet veiligheid bieden aan de kijker (de kijker moet een vertrouwd gevoel hebben net als in zijn of haar echte relaties)
3. Op het moment dat de afstand tussen het personage en de kijker dreigt te vergroten of zelfs afgebroken te worden zal er een vorm van protest van de kijker volgen.²⁴

Horton & Wohl hebben het in hun artikel ook over identificatie in relatie tot PSI. Ze typeren de rol van identificatie in PSI als iets wat onderhevig is aan intervallen. Beide kunnen als een apart concept gezien worden maar soms kunnen beiden even tijdelijk overlappen.²⁵ Horton & Wohl spreken ook over extreme PSI, dit moet gezien worden als een soort van continue staat van identificatie waarbij de kijker zich nog wel als zichzelf ziet.²⁶ Verder dan dit hebben zij het verband niet uitgewerkt maar ik denk dat dit concept goed te koppelen is aan het begrip "lange termijn identificatie" van Costello dat hierboven is besproken. "Lange termijn identificatie" werd hierbij gezien als een continue cognitieve verbondenheid met een personage en dit lijkt haast compleet overeen te komen met wat Horton & Wohl als "extreme PSI" zien. Hoewel dus eigenlijk alle auteurs blijven volhouden dat de concepten identificatie en PSI absoluut verschillend van elkaar zijn, worden ze wel steeds

²⁴ T. Cole & L. Leets, "Attachment styles and intimate television viewing: insecurely forming a relationship in a parasocial way" *Journal of Social and Personal Relationships* 16 (1999): 497-498.

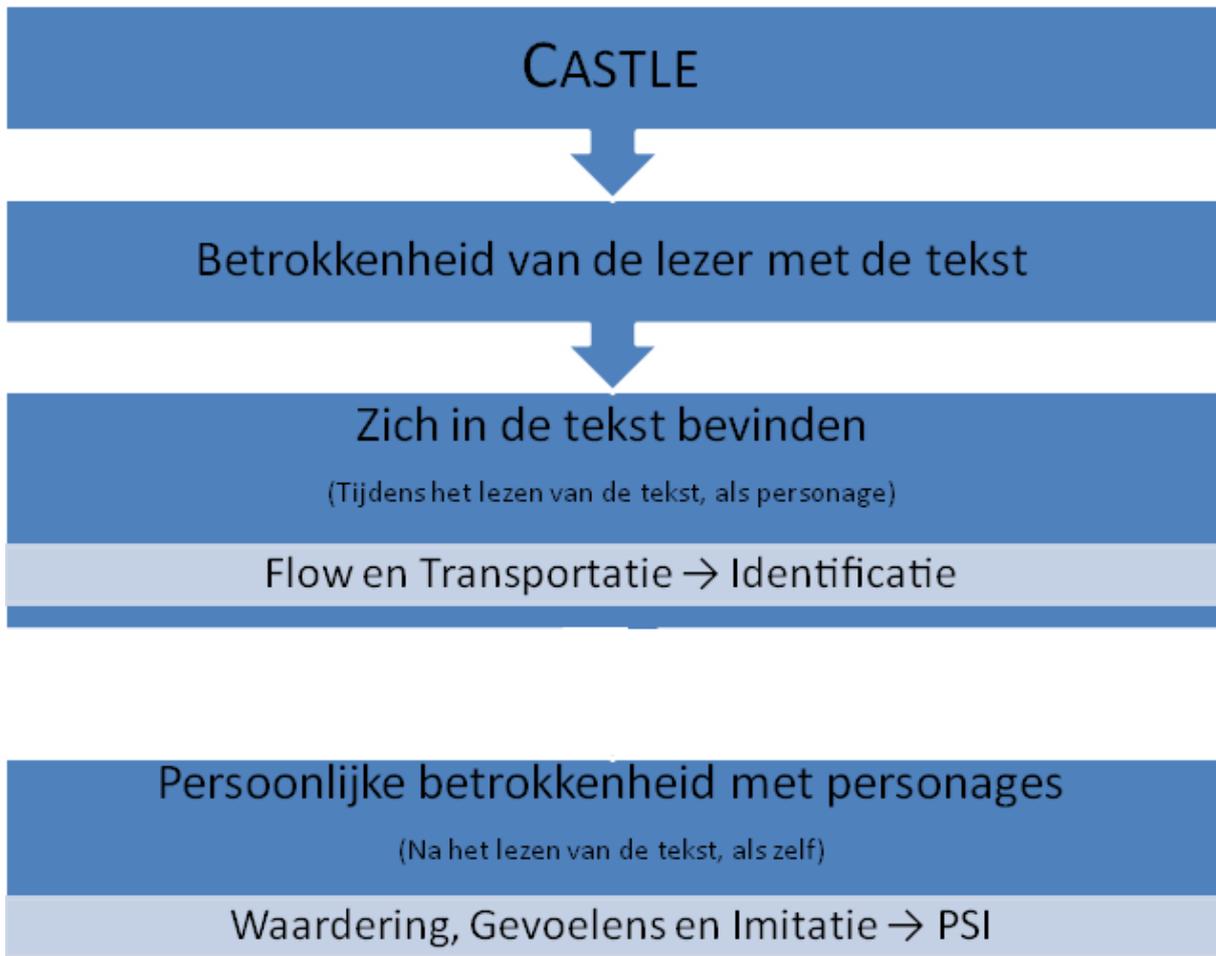
²⁵ Horton & Wohl, 220.

²⁶ Horton & Wohl, 226.

aan elkaar gekoppeld en door elkaar gehaald. Dit wekt de suggestie dat de twee begrippen erg nauw met elkaar verbonden en zelfs verweven zijn.

Ook Horton & Wohl hadden dus al moeite met het onderscheid aangeven tussen identificatie en PSI. Ze stelden dat het wel met intervallen een onderdeel van PSI kan zijn maar dat het toch wel weer een ander concept is. Waarom worden nu in bijna al het onderzoek naar de persoonlijke band en reacties tussen kijker en fictief personage, begrippen als identificatie, PSI, imitatie, etc. door elkaar gehaald? Mijn antwoord hierop is deels hetzelfde als dat van Cohen, namelijk dat deze concepten wel verschillend van elkaar zijn maar dat ze zo met elkaar verwrongen zijn dat het moeilijk is om ze uit elkaar te houden. Identificatie kan voor PSI zorgen en vice versa. Imitatie kan een gevolg zijn van identificatie en vice versa. Een waardering kan tot gevolg hebben dat men PSI ontwikkelt en vice versa. Juist doordat deze processen zo nauw samenwerken als het gaat om de band tussen kijker en personage, is het moeilijk om deze afzonderlijk van elkaar te meten. Ze stimuleren elkaar. De rede waarom het dus voor bijna alle wetenschappers die zich ermee bezig houden zo moeilijk is om deze concepten uit elkaar te houden, is omdat ze verweven zijn met elkaar. Het is daarom haast onmogelijk om deze concepten apart van elkaar te behandelen. Om hier een duidelijker beeld van te kunnen schetsen heb ik aan de hand van mijn eigen casus, de serie CASTLE, de volgende tabel opgesteld:

Tabel 2



Een lezer van een tekst (in geval van mijn onderzoek dus CASTLE) zal allereerst in aanraking komen met de tekst (daarbij moet niet alleen gedacht worden aan de tv-serie zelf maar ook aan alle tie-in's). Daaruit kan een betrokkenheid bij de tekst volgen maar dit is niet noodzakelijk. Tijdens het lezen van de tekst kan de lezer zich even tijdelijk in de tekst gaan bevinden. Dit kan zich in verschillende vormen voordoen, zoals het zich bevinden in een flow of het worden getransporteerd naar de wereld van de tekst. Wat daaruit kan voortvloeien is dat de lezer zich gaat identificeren met een of meerdere personages uit de tekst. De lezer ziet zichzelf hier als het karakter en begrijpt daarmee volledig wat de gevoelens en doelen zijn van een personage.

Na het lezen van de tekst kan er vervolgens een ontwikkeling tot persoonlijke betrokkenheid met de personages plaatsvinden. Men waardeert de personages, heeft gevoelens voor hen, imiteert hen. De lezer blijft zichzelf maar ontwikkelt een zeer persoonlijke, vriendschappelijke band met de personages.

Er is er een duidelijk verband tussen het zich bevinden in de tekst en identificatie en persoonlijke betrokkenheid en PSI. Het zijn geen losse elementen maar begrippen die met elkaar verbonden zijn. Iemand die een para sociale relatie met een karakter heeft opgebouwd kan zich daarmee ook gaan identificeren. Ook andersom kan iemand die zich met een karakter identificeert er daarna ook een para sociale relatie mee beginnen. Sterker nog ik ben van mening dat deze twee begrippen elkaar versterken. Maar ze hoeven niet perse allebei aanwezig te zijn, men kan zich bijvoorbeeld ook alleen tijdelijk identificeren zonder dat er PSI plaatsvindt. Het doel van dit onderzoek is dan ook juist om deze persoonlijke betrokkenheid tussen kijker en fictief personage te analyseren en daarmee te kijken welke van deze concepten waar te nemen zijn en een duidelijker beeld te krijgen over hoe ze zich tot elkaar verhouden. Voordat daar aan begonnen kan worden zal eerst de methodologische aanpak uitgelegd en onderbouwd worden.

Methode

Om de persoonlijke betrokkenheid van de kijkers van de serie CASTLE met de personages te kunnen analyseren, zal ik moeten gaan kijken op welke manier deze betrokkenheid naar voren komt. De methode die ik daarvoor zal gaan gebruiken zal ik in deze paragraaf uitleggen en onderbouwen. Voordat ik daaraan begin is wat algemene informatie over mijn casus noodzakelijk.

De serie CASTLE gaat over de beroemde detectiveschrijver Richard Castle, die nadat hij zijn meest succesvolle hoofdpersonage uit zijn boeken ombracht kampt met een schrijversblok. Hij vindt zijn inspiratie voor een nieuw hoofdpersonage en een nieuwe boekenreeks, in de New Yorkse rechercheur Kate Beckett. Via zijn (machtige) connecties krijgt Castle toestemming om Beckett in haar werk als politieagente te mogen volgen om inspiratie op te kunnen doen. Beckett, een fervent lezer van Castle's boeken, staat in eerste instantie afwijzend ten opzichte van het verzoek dat Castle haar bij moordzaken vergezelt. Later stelt Beckett dit bij en erkent dat Castle een nuttige hulp is bij het oplossen van misdaden en er ontstaat ook een romantische spanning tussen de twee.

Mijn keuze voor de serie CASTLE komt vooral voort uit de bijzondere marketingstrategie die ABC heeft gebruikt om de serie te promoten:

“Instead of the marketing department marketing the show and saying “Watch Our Show!”, they turned Richard Castle into a “real person” rather than just a TV character.”²⁷

²⁷ *Richard Castle: Fictional Character or Real Person?* (2011) op [JaimieCooper.me](http://jaimiecooper.me)
<http://jaimiecooper.me/2011/05/21/richard-castle-fictional-character-or-real-person/> bezocht op 16-06-2012

Deze strategie om er maar alles aan te doen om Richard Castle echt te laten lijken heeft voor het publiek het gevolg dat de afstand tussen kijker en personage verkleind wordt. Deze afstandsverkleining past goed bij de theorie van Horton & Wohl over PSI:

“To say that he is familiar and intimate is to use pale and feeble language for the pervasiveness and closeness with which multitudes feel his presence.”²⁸

Er moet volgens Horton & Wohl dus alles aan gedaan worden om het fictieve personage zo zicht mogelijk bij de lezer te laten staan (closeness). Dit aspect van PSI komt in CASTLE goed naar voren. Fans van Richard Castle kunnen via facebook of twitter zijn dagelijkse bezigheden volgen (of zelfs contact met hem opnemen), op zijn website kunnen ze meer lezen over wie hij is en ze kunnen hem echt ontmoeten als ze naar zijn signeersessies voor zijn boeken komen. Een fan van de serie beschrijft zelf de band die ze met Castle heeft als volgt:

“I mean, how many times have you watched a show or read a book and thought “Man, it’d been cool if I could ever meet that character.” This gives you an opportunity to have that feeling, a chance to talk to Castle, the character – not the actor who plays him.”²⁹

Dit is een belangrijke dimensie voor mijn onderzoek, namelijk het moment waarop de kijker zich zo betrokken voelt met een van de personages uit de serie dat de realiteit even tijdelijk negeert of laat verdwijnen. Dit is ook de belangrijkste reden waarom ik voor de serie CASTLE heb gekozen als casus. De makers van de serie proberen door middel van een specifieke marketing strategie, de grens tussen fictie en realiteit te vervagen om zo veel mogelijk kijkers aan te trekken (ook weer een kenmerk van PSI). Zij doen dit door de boeken die de fictionele Richard Castle in de serie zogenaamd heeft geschreven,

²⁸ Horton & Wohl, 2.

²⁹ *Richard Castle: Fictional Character or Real Person?* (2011) op JaimieCooper.me <http://jaimecooper.me/2011/05/21/richard-castle-fictional-character-or-real-person/> bezocht op 16-06-2012

werkelijk uit te brengen en de acteur die Castle speelt deze boeken ook in zijn rol te laten promoten.

Maar ook in de serie zelf wordt er alles aan gedaan om de illusie in stand te houden dat Richard Castle en de andere personages uit de serie allemaal echt bestaan. Zo is Richard Castle gek op zijn telefoon en social media en op het moment dat de kijker hem in de serie iets via social media ziet posten verschijnt het ook werkelijk op zijn facebook en twitterpagina (zie bijlage 1). Ook verschijnen er vaak foto's van Richard Castle en de andere personages op facebook en twitter in hun alledaagse situatie als de camera's er even niet bijzijn (afbeelding 1).



Afbeelding 1: Twitter Richard Castle: dochter van Castle op een schoolreisje.³⁰

Een andere slimme truc die ABC gebruikt is het plaatsen van echte schrijvers in de serie. Zo speelt Richard Castle in de serie regelmatig poker met James Patterson, Stephen J. Cannell, Michael Connelly en Dennis Lehane. Deze vervaging tussen fictie en realiteit die gecreëerd wordt, is zeer interessant om onderzoek naar te doen omdat er daarmee een nieuw soort band tussen kijker en personages gecreëerd wordt. Een band die niet alleen heel persoonlijk (zoals

³⁰ Richard Castle (2012) op Twitter <https://twitter.com/WriteRCastle> bezocht op 16-06-2012

in de theorie over PSI beschreven is) maar ook toegankelijk is voor de kijkers. Dit is dan juist ook de reden waarom ik voor de serie CASTLE heb gekozen als onderzoeksonderwerp. Deze band is zo uniek en nieuw dat het me interessant lijkt om te analyseren welk effect dit heeft op de kijkers. Wat typeert deze band tussen kijker en personage?

Verwerven en keuze respondenten

De basis van mijn onderzoek zal bestaan uit het analyseren van reacties van de kijkers van de serie. Deze reacties zijn geplaatst op messageboards en discussieforums over de serie. De twee messageboards die ik heb gebruikt bij het vergaren van reacties zijn het officiële forum van ABC (<http://abc.go.com/shows/castle/discuss?cat=177593>) en een van de grootste niet officiële discussieboards (<http://castletv.net/forums>). Via deze forums heb ik een database van zo'n 5000 reacties samengesteld waarin persoonlijke betrokkenheid met een of meerdere van de personages uit de serie naar voren komt. De forumonderwerpen waaruit deze reacties zijn gehaald zijn zeer verschillend. Hierbij moet men denken aan algemene reacties op de serie, reacties op een specifieke aflevering, reacties op de boeken, reacties op de personages. Bij het verzamelen van ongeveer 5000 reacties had ik het gevoel dat er saturatie was bereikt omdat ik veel van dezelfde reacties tegenkwam en ik het idee had dat er niet echt iets nieuws meer te vinden was.

Alle reacties en gebruikersprofielen op deze messageboards zijn vrijwel anoniem (gebruikers kunnen zelf kiezen welke persoonlijke informatie ze willen delen met de andere gebruikers). Een nadeel hiervan is dat ik dus geen definitie van mijn onderzoekseenheden kan geven. Het enige wat ik kan zeggen is dat het CASTLE kijkers of lezers zijn die actief zijn op forums. Ik heb er voor mijn onderzoek ook voor gekozen om mijn respondenten verder te anonimiseren door persoonlijke informatie volledig weg te laten en de respondenten te nummeren. Omdat de respondenten zelf natuurlijk niet weten dat ze meedoen aan mijn onderzoek is dit noodzakelijk. Een groot voordeel van het feit dat er met bestaande gegevens is gewerkt, is dat de natuurlijke situatie van de forums

niet verstoord wordt en dat er geen reactiviteit is opgetreden. Respondenten hadden zich namelijk geremd kunnen voelen in het beschrijven van hun band met een personage als ze hadden geweten dat het gebruikt zou worden in een onderzoek. Omdat ik niet in heb ingegrepen in een bestaande situatie, zijn mijn verzamelde reacties natuurlijk en hoef ik niet te twijfelen aan de kwaliteit van de verzamelde gegevens. Een tweede voordeel van het gebruik van bestaand materiaal is dat het materiaal zeer toegankelijk is. Ik heb zelf kunnen zoeken naar geschikt materiaal zonder dat ik daar toestemming van de gebruikers voor nodig had. Een derde voordeel is dat er minder ethische problemen zijn ontstaan omdat ik me als onderzoeker niet in de onderzoeksgroep heb gemengd. Aan het gebruik van bestaand materiaal zit echter ook een groot nadeel. Zo heb ik in principe informatie uit tweede hand vergaard en heb ik als onderzoeker geen direct contact met mijn respondenten gehad. Dit betekent ook dat ik geen vragen aan de respondenten heb kunnen stellen op het moment dat het misschien niet helemaal duidelijk is wat er met een reacties bedoeld is. Het grootste gevaar hiervan is dat ik vervolgens als onderzoeker mijn eigen perspectief op dergelijke reacties zal toepassen. Dit is ook een van de punten waar ik goed op heb gelet tijdens het analyseren van de reacties. Ik heb zoveel mogelijk geprobeerd mijn eigen interpretatie achterwege te laten en te kijken naar de perspectieven van de respondenten. Dit heb ik mede bereikt door het gebruik van een open codering, hierover later meer).

Nadat ik mijn database van ongeveer 5000 reacties in een bestand had gezet ben ik aan de slag gegaan met het reduceren van informatie die niet relevant was voor het beantwoorden van mijn vraagstelling (zie bijlage 2). Daarbij moet gedacht worden aan opmerkingen die niet over persoonlijke betrokkenheid gingen of helemaal niet over CASTLE gingen. De gereduceerde stukken heb ik in het document doorstreept maar heb ik wel in het bestand zelf laten staan, zodat ik later bij het labelen van de reacties niet de originele context van de uitspraken zou verliezen. Hoewel sommige uitspraken namelijk niet relevant waren zijn ze soms nog wel nuttig bij het begrijpen van de inhoud van een reactie die wel relevant is. Daarna heb ik moeten bepalen wat ik als analyse-

eenheid wilde opstellen. Ik heb daarbij gekozen voor zinnen/fragmenten als analyse-eenheid omdat ik een gedetailleerd beeld van de verschillende aspecten en de onderlinge relaties van mijn onderzoeksfenomeen wilde hebben. Deze fragmenten ben ik vervolgens gaan labelen (zie bijlage 2). Ik heb ervoor gekozen om dit op een open en onbevangen manier te doen; ik had van tevoren nog geen labels bedacht. Ik heb hierbij echter wel van tevoren een aantal aandachtspunten opgesteld zodat het labelen op een uniforme manier zou kunnen worden uitgevoerd. Zo heb ik erop gelet dat de fragmenten maar over een onderwerp gingen, de losse fragmenten inhoudelijk duidelijk waren (ook al ontbrak de context) en dat de fragmenten mochten overlappen (waardoor meerdere labels per fragment mogelijk waren). Het labelen van de fragmenten ging vervolgens goed, en ik had als snel door dat er steeds meer terugkerende labels aanwezig waren. Het open coderen had echter een nadeel: het is enorm tijdsintensief. Ik had na een ruime tijd labelen nog niet eens 1/3 van mijn onderzoeksmateriaal gebruikt. Dit kwam naast het tijdsintensieve aspect van het labelen zelf ook doordat ik steeds terug moest kijken naar wat ik al gelabeld had om wijzigingen te maken. Ik twijfelde vervolgens of ik door moest gaan met labelen en hier steeds meer tijd in te steken of dat ik zou stoppen en gebruiken wat ik al had. Uiteindelijk heb ik besloten (na overleg met mijn begeleidster) om niet mijn gehele database te gebruiken voor mijn onderzoek en het te laten bij wat ik al had. De grootste reden hiervoor is dat ik niet het idee had dat er nog nieuwe labels bij zouden komen en dat de labels die ik al had veelvoudig terug kwamen. Inhoudelijke verzadiging was dus al bereikt en het zou niet veel toevoeging geven om nog verder te gaan.

De verzamelde reacties moesten vervolgens geordend worden zodat ik de onderlinge verbanden en verschillen zou kunnen analyseren. De ordening die ik hebt gemaakt is in tabel 3 te vinden.

Tabel 3	
Categorie	Aantal
Verwarring werkelijkheid	31
Wijzen op werkelijkheid	14
Geen werkelijkheid	3
Fandom	29
Waardering	42
Kritiek geven	16
Advies geven	12
Emotionele reactie	10
Fysieke reactie	7
Fantasie	10
Voorspelling doen	11
Wensen	8
Persoonlijke informatie delen	10
Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen	12
Koppelen aan eigen leven	33
Persoonlijke betrokkenheid	187
Intimiteit	16
Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter	112
Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker	12
Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter	9
Transportatie	3

Uiteindelijk had ik 21 categorieën. Vervolgens ben ik gaan kijken of enkele labels synoniem waren, of er labels waren met een gemeenschappelijk kenmerk en of sommige labels te klein waren om uitspraken over te kunnen doen. De categorie transportatie bijvoorbeeld was te klein en omdat ik deze categorie ook aan geen enkele andere kon koppelen heb ik besloten om deze te verwijderen. De categorie geen werkelijkheid was ook zeer klein maar en nadat ik deze ook nader bekeken had bleken de uitspraken in deze categorie beter in een andere te passen, namelijk niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter. Na het

koppelen aan elkaar en vinden van synoniemen in de verschillende categorieën ben ik vervolgens tot 3 kernthema's gekomen: werkelijkheid, reacties van de lezer en relatie van de lezer met een karakter. De verschillende subcategorieën die ik daarin gemaakt heb zijn in de onderstaande tabellen te vinden.

Tabel 3: Kernthema werkelijkheid



Tabel 4: Kernthema reacties van de lezer



Tabel 5: Kernthema relatie van de lezer met een karakter



Op het moment dat ik de verschillende labels echter aan elkaar wilde relateren kwam ik erachter dat er iets niet klopte. Mijn labels uit het tweede kernthema leken niet geldig. Na analyse van de labels en de uitspraken die ieder label bevatte kwam ik tot de conclusie dat het tweede kernlabel, reacties van de lezer, niet relevant was voor mijn onderzoek en dat er bovendien veel uitspraken uit de subcategorieën beter in een andere subcategorie uit het eerste of derde kernthema geplaatst konden worden. Na dit aangepast te hebben ontstonden er twee kernthema's, werkelijkheid en relatie van de lezer met een karakter met ieder respectievelijk 2 en 8 subcategorieën (tabel 6).

Tabel 6

Kernthema	Categorie	Aantal
Werkelijkheid	Verwarring werkelijkheid	46
	Wijzen op werkelijkheid	24
Relatie van de lezer met een karakter	Persoonlijke informatie delen	32
	Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen	14
	Koppelen aan eigen leven	35
	Persoonlijke betrokkenheid	191
	Intimiteit	23
	Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter	128
	Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker	20
	Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter	46

In totaal bevat mijn uiteindelijke casus 559 analyse eenheden van 358 verschillende respondenten (zie bijlage 3). Met deze eenheden ben ik in mijn analyse aan de slag gegaan.

Analyse

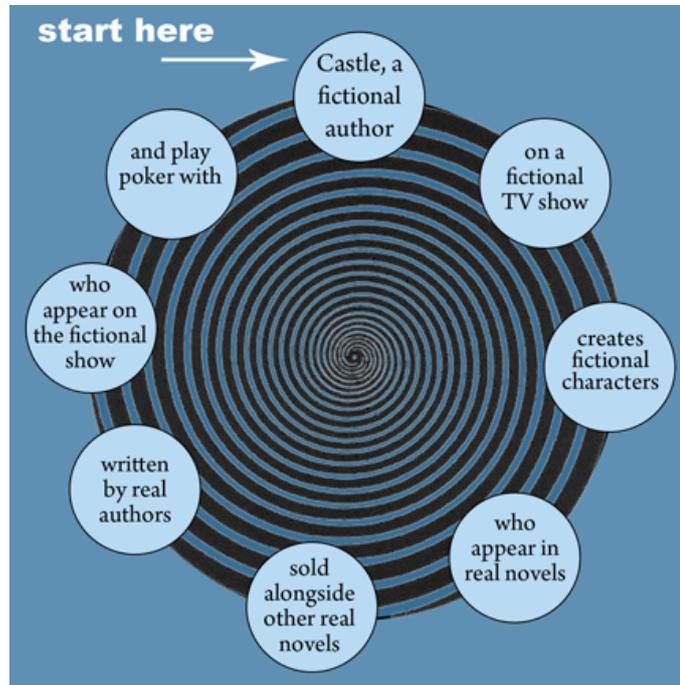
In dit deel van mijn onderzoek zal ik mijn kernthema's en subcategorieën definiëren, voorbeelden geven van de reacties en ten slotte zal ik ze met elkaar vergelijken.

Werkelijkheid

Het eerste kernthema wat ik hier wil behandelen en analyseren is "werkelijkheid". Dit kernthema bevat opmerkingen van respondenten die betrekking hebben over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de serie CASTLE en de karakters daarin. Onder de respondenten is een groot verschil op te merken tussen zij die aannemen en/of spelen dat Richard Castle en de andere karakters 'echte' mensen zijn en zij die inzien dat het slechts fictionele karakters zijn en de 'gelovers' ervan proberen te overtuigen dat het niet echt is. De marketing strategie van ABC zorgt naast de realistische ondertoon van het narratief ervoor dat een aantal respondenten twijfelen aan de fictiefheid van de karakters. Juist omdat de respondenten niet alleen in aanraking komen met Richard Castle door middel van de televisie uitzendingen maar hem ook op facebook en twitter kunnen volgen, zijn boeken kunnen lezen en hem persoonlijk kunnen ontmoeten, zijn ze in de war over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van het karakter. Respondenten vertonen daarom ook vaak een soort van tweestrijd. Aan de ene kan snappen ze eigenlijk wel dat Richard Castle niet echt bestaat maar toch hebben ze het idee Richard Castle wel echt te kennen.

"I feel as though puzzling this out requires a logical/scientific approach rather than the writerly one I am more accustomed to assuming. I'm used to approaching novels and even movies and TV shows as a writer – cringing at bad lines, silently complimenting (and envying) the writers when they pull off something particularly clever – but when it comes to Castle, I keep going over and over the pieces of reality and fiction, trying to put them together like pieces of a puzzle, as though there must be an answer to this question (a question I'm not even sure how to ask other

than to say: what is up with this?) if I can just maneuver each piece into its proper place. I want to figure out what all this means, or if it means anything at all.” (R356)



(R356)

Deze respondent geeft zelf deze worsteling tussen werkelijkheid en fictie mooi aan, en probeert bovendien ook zelf te verklaren wat er nu exact aan de hand is met Castle waardoor ze zo in de war is. Door middel van de diagram probeert ze te verklaren waar de werkelijkheid begint en de fictie eindigt. Ze labelt de verschillende elementen uit de serie als echt of niet echt. Ze wil erachter komen wat het allemaal betekent voor haar en hoe fictie en werkelijkheid zich verhouden tot elkaar. Ze komt hier zelf niet helemaal uit en vraagt andere respondenten of zij een antwoord kunnen bedenken.

Respondent 356 is niet de enige die het moeilijk heeft met het definiëren van het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de personages uit de serie. Veel respondenten worstelen met het definiëren van het verschil tussen feit en fictie zoals ik bij de subcategorie “verwarring werkelijkheid” zal laten zien. Maar er zijn aan de andere kant ook respondenten die wel begrijpen dat Castle een fictief karakter

is. Zij zien het als hun rol om de respondenten die nog in verwarring zijn duidelijk te maken dat Richard Castle slechts een fictief karakter is.

“In a society where we confuse actors with characters, is this healthy? Nathan Fillion can no longer walk the streets as Nathan Fillion. He will now be known as Richard Castle, not just by confused TV-watching fans, but also by those who think that he really is a famous (albeit horrid) author.” (R357)

Deze respondent vraagt zich af of de gebruikte marketing strategie wel gezond is. Ze stelt dat dat niet alleen te televisie fans maar ook de fans van de boeken nu gaan denken dat Richard Castle echt bestaat en dat dit negatieve gevolgen heeft voor Nathan Fillion die Richard Castle in de speelt. De rol die deze respondent heeft in de groep, het onderwijzen van de verwarde respondenten, zal ik verder bespreken bij de subcategorie “wijzen op realisme”.

Verwarring werkelijkheid

Zoals hierboven vermeld vertonen veel van de respondenten in deze categorie een verwarring als het gaat om het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de karakters uit de serie. Ze zijn vaak in de war over de echtheid van een karakter en kunnen de grens tussen fictie en realiteit niet goed aangeven.

“There's something so real about these characters, so real about this show that you literally feel that you're in the middle of the case and relationships with them.” (R358)

“Such great performances and chemistry from the two leads, so much so that I feel like I'm really looking in onto a real relationship at times. I believe that a Richard Castle and Kate Beckett do exist and they evoke such emotions in me; happiness, sadness, frustration and such joy when they finally got together. I'm not quite sure what is Castle to me ... I do know that I can't quite do without tuning in each week. Really? A TV series? I need help ... LOL!” (R66)

“Richard Castle is the real writer (if he really exist) and Natan Fillion plays him on tv, and represents him in all images I have seen... did he exist before ABC started the CASTLE TV show? “ (R74)

“Richard Castle exists! Ask the other authors he plays poker with. I just got done reading "Naked Heat" on my Nook and loved! “ (R75)

“So Beckett is real?” (R77)

“Does anyone else automatically read them as the 'real' people and not who they are in the book LOL I've been doing it all morning. Loving Rook already, he's so going to give Nikki hell LOL” (R32)

De respondenten laten duidelijk merken in de war te zijn over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de serie en van de karakters. De respondenten hierboven geven daar allemaal verschillende redenen voor. Respondent 359 en 66 geven aan dat het realistische acteurspel van de acteurs hen het gevoel geeft dat ze met echte personen te maken hebben. Maar respondent 75 geeft bijvoorbeeld weer aan dat Richard Castle wel werkelijk moet bestaan omdat hij met echte misdaadauteurs (zoals James Patterson, Stephen J. Cannell, Michael Connelly en Dennis Lehane) poker speelt. Respondent 32 heeft de boeken van Richard Castle gelezen en geeft daarom aan de personages als echte mensen te zien. Respondent 74 lijkt te begrijpen dat Nathan Fillion een acteur die Richard Castle speelt maar vraagt zich daarna wel af of er een echte Richard Castle is. Al deze respondenten vragen zich dus om verschillende redenen af of Richard Castle echt bestaat. De verwarring die hierbij ontstaat wordt veroorzaakt door de marketingstrategie die ABC heeft toegepast. De grens tussen fictie en de werkelijkheid is hier dus voor de respondenten (door een combinatie van factoren die vanuit de mediastrategie ontwikkeld zijn) zo vervaagd dat de respondenten het gevoel hebben dat Richard Castle echt bestaat. Horton & Wohl hadden het in hun theorie over PSI ook al over het vervagen van de grens tussen fictie en realiteit waardoor een illusie van intimiteit en vriendschap gecreëerd wordt.³¹

Een veel voorkomend fenomeen onder deze groep respondenten is dan ook het praten over een karakter alsof het echte mensen zijn die buiten de serie ook gevoelens hebben.

“Yeah, we as the audience know that Beckett is already head over heels in love with castle. But my question is more on whether Beckett the character knows that she is already in love with the guy? .” (R1)

“What I was wondering about: He writes that Nikki Heat is taking the subway to work, is that fiction or does that indicate that Beckett takes the subway to work as well? There was more that I was wondering about if

³¹ Horton & Wohl, 4-7.

Rick wrote that in his book cause Beckett was doing that as well. But I can't think of anything else in the moment." (R55)

"That is certainly romantic and might even happen to other people in the real world, but that clearly is not Castle and Beckett. What's worse is that she can't even tell Castle that they might have a chance later on like she does at the swings because it would be wholly unfair to Josh, and though that might be alright with most us in the fandom, that's not who Kate is either." (R25)

"These two have spent at least a couple thousand hours together over the last 4 years, maybe more, and that's assuming Castle is only with Beckett on a case for 25% of a normal working year and someplace else the rest of the time. That's a lot of time to be next to each other and not bringing "it" up." (R83)

De respondenten hebben echt het gevoel dat de personages werkelijk bestaan en vragen aan elkaar en aan de karakters zelf (door middel van de social media pagina's van de personages uit de serie) welke gevoelens zij hebben en wat ze meemaken als de camera er niet bij is. Respondent 55 vraagt zich bijvoorbeeld na het lezen van de boeken van Castle af of Beckett met de metro naar haar werk gaat omdat het personage in de boeken wat op haar gebaseerd is dat ook doet. Respondent 83 berekend hoeveel tijd Castle en Beckett met elkaar doorbrengen als de camera's er niet bij zijn. Deze respondenten geven dus eigenlijk allemaal aan dat zij geloven dat de personages echt bestaan en praten over hen alsof ze hen goed kennen. Dit sluit allemaal mooi aan bij de theorie van Horton & Wohl over PSI.

Maar juist door middel van de marketing strategie van ABC gaat het nog verder dan de theorie van Horton & Wohl, de respondenten hebben namelijk de mogelijkheid om Richard Castle zelf aan te spreken.

"I don't like how you're treating Beckett. She really does love you, and you need to give her the chance to tell you. She's better than that stupid blonde in your car!" (R76)

"Richard Castle :-)) Some people work for a living as Beckett would answer :-))" (R134)

"And Richard, why are you buying lattes when there is a perfectly good espresso machine in house now.... which I am sure was also deductible?"(R138)

"I'm so sorry, Castle. I know you're barely hanging on, but in the meantime, please don't drink yourself into oblivion. I don't want to hear about you landing yourself in rehab and settling for Natalie Rhodes with her Nikki Heat wig. Stay strong!" (R86)

Waar Horton & Wohl PSI definiëren als groei zonder fundamentele ontwikkeling, biedt het interactieve aspect van CASTLE de respondenten meer, namelijk groei met een fundamentele ontwikkeling. Richard Castle wordt voor de respondenten toegankelijk.³² De respondenten raken hierdoor persoonlijk betrokken bij Richard Castle. De band die ze hierbij creëren met een karakter vertoont veel overeenkomsten met die van een vriendschapsband. De respondenten raken persoonlijk betrokken met de personages. De subcategorie 'verwarring werkelijkheid' is daarmee te koppelen aan 'persoonlijke betrokkenheid'. Veel respondenten die namelijk in de war zijn over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de personages spreken de karakters door middel van social media aan. Over wat dit inhoud en welke gevolgen dat heeft is in de subcategorie 'persoonlijke betrokkenheid' meer te lezen.

Naast persoonlijke betrokkenheid is ook imitatie is hier een veel voorkomend fenomeen: respondenten denken dat ze een karakter zijn en schrijven vanuit het perspectief van een karakter.

³² Horton & Wohl, 3.

*"I see your watching **Castle**, I am **Richard Castle**. Did you know that?"*

(R71)

"Today, I feel like pleasing you more than before

Today, I know what I want to do, but i don't know what for

To be living for you is all that I want to do

To be loving you it'll all be there when my dreams come true

Today, you'll make me say that I somehow have changed

Today, you'll look into my eyes I'm just not the same

To be any more than all I am would be a lie

I'm so full of love I could burst apart and start to cry

Today, everything you want, I swear it all will come true

Today, I realize how much I'm in love with you

With you standing there I could tell the world what it means to love

To go on from here I can't use words, they don't say enough

Please, please listen to me, its taken so long to come true

And it's all for you, all for you..... 🤔 🤔 😊 " (R72)

Als ik de uitspraken van deze subcategorie terugkoppel aan de theorie over de betrokkenheid van de kijker met een tekst, komt één concept heel duidelijk naar voren: PSI. De marketingstrategie van ABC is hierin de dominerende factor. De respondenten worden op verschillende vlakken (tv, social media, internet, persoonlijk) zo ondergedompeld in de wereld van Richard Castle en de andere karakters dat, of ze nu wel of niet weten dat het een fictief personage is, ze een hechte band met hen ontwikkelen (PSI). Deze vorm van PSI is echter anders dan zoals Horon & Wohl die in hun onderzoek hebben beschreven. Waar Horton & Wohl nog spraken van groei zonder fundamentele ontwikkeling, heeft de marketingstrategie ervoor gezorgd dat er wel zeker een ontwikkeling mogelijk is. Daarmee wordt de band, de intimiteit tussen respondent en personage, alleen maar sterker.

Wijzen op werkelijkheid

In reactie op respondenten die in de war zijn over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de serie of respondenten die gewoon aannemen dat de karakters echt bestaan, zijn er respondenten die een soort van scholende (maar vaak ook sarcastische) toon aannemen. Deze respondenten zien het vaak als hun taak om de 'gelovende' en verwarde respondenten te helpen in het ontdekken van de waarheid.

"Guys, Richard Castle is a fictional character and they release the books under his name (I think its really cool). Nathan Fillion plays him on the show Castle. If you have watched every episode of Castle multiple times and all of the interviews and what not.. you would know." (R87)

Deze respondent heeft die scholende rol dus op hem genomen. Wat echter wel opvallend is en bij veel van de respondenten in deze groep terugkomt, is dat ze nogal neerkijken op de respondenten uit de categorie 'verwarring werkelijkheid'. Ze voelen zichzelf beter omdat zij experts zijn en wel snappen wat echt is en wat niet. Wat vaak daaruit volgt is een spottende of sarcastische toon.

"Wonder how many "friends" think this is a real person's account?" (R88)

"A puppy dies everytime someone says a prayer for a fictional character..." (R89)

"I guess that detective died, huh? Send her family my regards. Oh wait, you're fictional..." (R90)

"(of course its metaphorically. i'm not crazy enough to think they're real)"(R93)

Opvallend is dat de respondenten die in de war zijn over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de serie zelden op de reacties van de respondenten die hen willen wijzen op de werkelijkheid reageren. Op het moment dat een respondent een verwarde respondent wil wijzen op het fictieve karakter van de

serie, zal de verwarde respondent bijna nooit direct terug reageren daarop. Een selectie van de weinige reacties tussen gelovers en niet gelovers is hieronder te lezen.

“It does help to spin out a TV series, it's true; but that doesn't make it total fantasy.” (R26)

“What? They had a different author write the book? Is that confirmed? Wow... I didn't know that. I thought that he wrote the book and is going to write the next book as well.” (R80)

De respondenten die in de war zijn over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de serie negeren de respondenten die de werkelijkheid en fictie wel weten te scheiden dus bijna altijd. Ze gaan vervolgens wel vaak gewoon verder met hun eigen verhaal en besteden bijna geen aandacht aan het feit dat de karakters niet werkelijk zouden bestaan. Of dit intentioneel is omdat ze het echt geloven dat de karakters werkelijk bestaan of dat ze een bepaalde rol spelen om een band met een karakter te ontwikkelen kan ik hier zelf moeilijk bepalen omdat ik geen aanvullende informatie heb (ik kan het de respondenten ook niet vragen). Mijn gevoel zegt echter dat veel van deze respondenten zich wel bewust zijn van de werkelijkheid en dat ze doen alsof ze geloven dat een karakter werkelijk bestaat om zich dichterbij de serie te voelen en een meer persoonlijkere band te kunnen opbouwen. Ze spelen als het ware het spel mee in tegenstelling tot de respondenten die spelbrekers zijn. Daarmee zouden ze zichzelf haast in de fictieve wereld van Castle willen plaatsen. Ze creëren daarmee een illusie van intimiteit. Maar ik wil hier nogmaals voorop stellen dat dit naar aanleiding van de uitspraken die ik verzameld heb niet definitief aan te tonen is.

Relatie van de lezer met een karakter

Ik zal nu verder gaan met het bespreken van het tweede kernthema. In dit kernthema zijn uitspraken van respondenten geplaatst waarin een bepaalde relatie van de respondent met een karakter naar voren komt. Daarbij is het zowel mogelijk dat respondenten de rol van een van de karakters aannemen en zichzelf plaatsen tegenover een ander karakter (hierbij gaat het bijna altijd om Richard Castle en Kate Beckett) als dat de respondenten zichzelf blijven en hun relatie tot een van de karakters aanduiden (zie hieronder de voorbeelden van respectievelijk respondent 42 en 145)

“I hope Castle will go to your wedding with me!

From:Kate Beckett” (R42)

“Rick Castle I know and love....the one who always tells his daughter the truth no matter what....come clean with Beckett NOW...ya'll need to talk!!!” (R145)

Respondenten uiteten deze relatie door bijvoorbeeld persoonlijke informatie over zichzelf te delen en dit te koppelen aan de karakters, zichzelf letterlijk in het verhaal te plaatsen (een rol voor zichzelf schrijven in de serie) of door hun eigen leven te koppelen aan dat van de karakters.

“I just love the show and have watched from day one. A great break from reality and my busy life. I have 5 kids, and I am also a foster parent for babies. I love the chance to delve into a great TV show that provides a great sanity break for my mind, body, and soul.” (R67)

“Anyone down for a manhunt? Let's get whoever shot Beckett and exact revenge for Montgomery too!” (R120)

“To me Castle is Stana Katic and the writers who brought the realism of PTSD to the people who needed it! I am one of them and I am forever grateful for it! It's been six years of trying to handle it on my own cause I am supposed to be the strong one in my family as the eldest. Now I am getting the treatment I need thanks to Kill Shot! Although my PTSD is more psychological than physical in cause – it's just as real as Becketts portrayal! Abig hug and thank you to both Stana and the writer!” (R64)

De intensiteit van deze relatie kan verschillen. Zo is het mogelijk dat de respondenten een persoonlijke betrokkenheid voelen, waarbij ze de respondenten als vrienden zien. Maar ook extreme gevallen zijn mogelijk: sommige respondenten zijn zo intiem met de karakters dat ze ze haast als een geliefde zien (respectievelijk respondent 41 en 312).

“I just wanted to give her a big hug and tell her that it's okay. (also her saying she's ready. I totally called it!)” (R41)

“Why oh why did he pick Jenny over me...?” (R312)

De intensiteit van de relatie van de respondent met de karakters hangt samen met in hoeverre zij het gevoel hebben de karakters te begrijpen. Hierover is meer te lezen in de subcategorie ‘begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter’.

Wat ten slotte erg opvallend was aan de reacties van de respondenten in dit kernthema, is dat ze vaak focussen op Kate Beckett en daar ook de meest hechte band mee lijken te ontwikkelen terwijl ze Richard Castle direct kunnen aanspreken. Een mogelijke verklaring daarvoor is te vinden in het feit dat de kijkers van de serie vanuit het standpunt van Richard Castle kijken. Men weet als kijker dus duidelijk wat Richard Castle voelt maar van Kate Beckett weet men dit niet. Hierbij is het voor de kijker makkelijker om Kate Beckett te begrijpen omdat er hier meer ruimte is voor de fantasie van de kijker. Het aanspreken van Richard Castle via social media of persoonlijk tijdens een boeksigneersessie is voor de kijker vervolgens de enige optie om in contact te komen met de personages uit de serie (alleen Castle maakt gebruik van social media en signeert boeken).

Persoonlijke informatie delen

Om hun persoonlijke band met een van de karakters uit de serie aan te duiden geven respondenten vaak persoonlijke informatie. Deze informatie koppelen ze dan aan de serie of aan de karakters. De respondenten willen dus graag aangeven hoe dicht ze bij de karakters staan en hoeveel ze begrijpen wat deze voelen. Hier is identificatie bij de respondenten eigenlijk niet mogelijk (eigen ik is namelijk sterk aanwezig). De reacties die de respondenten hier echter geven duiden sterk op PSI. De respondenten doen zich voor als kennissen of vrienden van de karakters en reageren op hun uitspraken of acties.

“YAY!!!!!!!! CONGRATULATIONS!!!!!!!!!!!! I WISH ALL THE BEST FOR THE TWO OF YOU AND YOU'RE GETTING MARRIED ON MY BIRTHDAY, HOW AWESOME IS THAT!?!?!?!?!?!?!?” (R43)

“Hope you come back soon... My heart aches for you. My thoughts are with you... I'm self-centered but I have to say I miss you so much already... “ (R97)

“Thank you for sharing this. My little brother came back from Afghanistan with what was called "light PTSD", but I know how much he has struggled with that. Will be praying for you!” (R96)

“But you are right I think. I was thinking about this last night. I can remember listening to Martin Luther King and Bobby Kennedy on the television (and the radio! How's that for old). I grew up with the notion that we are responsible for our actions and how they affect not only us, but others. I was raised to believe that making sacrifices for your family and friends was nothing out of the ordinary and that good, kind people make the choice to reach out to others. 9/11, globaliztion of so many things, internet, instant access to all matter of entertainment without ever setting foot outside one's home, social media that lets one make "friends" that will never been seen face-to-face – all those things take the

human out of human interaction. They give credence to the belief that "no one will take care are me better than me" so it's every man for himself. And you young whipper-snappers have been raised in that crucible." (R17)

Een belangrijke katalysator van deze van uitspraken over de relatie van de lezer met een of meerdere karakters uit de serie is een mediaevent wat ABC in het 4^e seizoen van de serie heeft gelanceerd. Rond de aflevering, waarin de twee karakters Kevin Ryan en Jenny O'Malley trouwen, is door ABC een heel mediaevent opgezet. Er is een speciale pagina aangemaakt voor de karakters op de Amerikaanse bruiloftssite The Knot.³³ Hier konden respondenten meer lezen over de karakters, over het huwelijksaanzoek, de receptie, de ceremonie, de huwelijksreis, foto's bekijken en bovendien konden ze in het online gastenboek een reactie voor het bruidspaar achterlaten. En dat reageren is ook gebeurd: na twee dagen waren er al zoveel reacties voor het bruidspaar op de website verschenen dat de server het niet meer aankon en er geen nieuwe reacties meer gegeven konden worden. Deze website komt mede doordat de twee acteurs die de Ryan en Jenny in de serie spelen in het echt ook zijn getrouwd als echt over. Veel van de reacties in deze hele categorie gaan daarom ook over deze bruiloft.

³³ "Our Wedding: Jennifer & Kevin (2012) op the Knot. <http://duffyomalleyandryan.ourwedding.com/> bezocht op 14-03-2012

Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

Een andere subcategorie met betrekking tot de relatie van de lezer met een karakter zijn de respondenten die zichzelf letterlijk in het verhaal van de serie plaatsen. Daarbij is het bijvoorbeeld ook mogelijk dat ze zichzelf als een van de karakters zien, zoals hieronder.

"I hope Kate will go your wedding with me!

from: Rick Castle" (R42)

"I hope Castle will go to your wedding with me!

From:Kate Beckett" (R42)

Deze respondent stelt zichzelf op als Kate Beckett en Rick Castle en spreekt als hen de andere twee karakters uit de serie aan. Dit is duidelijk een soort van identificatie met twee van de karakters.

Veel vaker voorkomend is echter dat de respondenten een rol aannemen waarbij ze hun eigen identiteit behouden en zichzelf in het verhaal plaatsen.

"Anyone down for a manhunt? Let's get whoever shot Beckett and exact revenge for Montgomery too!" (R120)

"Wishing you the BEST life brings you.

May you be BLESSED with many happy years together. Wish I could be there!

HUGS!!!"(R121)

"The wedding was beautiful.I am so glad you invited me." (R122)

"It is the family I like to think I belong to..." (R117)

"Congrats from Sweet Home Alabama, USA. -Ill be the one weeping in the back corner."(R125)

Deze respondenten plaatsen zichzelf dus letterlijk in het verhaal van de serie. Hoewel dit soort reacties niet ontzettend veel zijn voorgekomen in de casus (in totaal 14 keer) vind ik deze reacties wel heel interessant omdat deze reacties juist een extreem vriendschappelijke band tussen de respondenten en een of meerdere van de karakters aantoont. Respondent 117 zegt het zelf heel mooi: het is de familie waar zij denkt bij te horen. Hier is dus geen sprake van identificatie want de respondenten blijven gewoon zichzelf. Wel is hier te spreken van een zeer hechte vriendschapsband met een bepaalde intimiteit. Veel van de kenmerken van PSI die Horton & Wohl in hun artikel beschrijven zijn terug te vinden in deze reacties. Er ontstaan een intieme en hechte vriendschapsband tussen de respondenten en de personages uit de serie. Die relatie is zo intiem dat de respondent het gevoel heeft onderdeel te zijn van het verhaal. De respondenten zijn daarmee bereid de personages onvoorwaardelijk te steunen (zoals R120). Een groot verschil in de theorie van Horton & Wohl over PSI en de casus van CASTLE is dat het eenzijdige karakter van PSI wat zij beschrijven (een groei in vriendschap zonder fundamentele ontwikkeling) enige aanpassing vereist. Door middel van de komst van social media is er nu namelijk wel degelijk een mogelijkheid tot dubbelzijdige interactie. De respondenten kunnen Richard Castle via facebook of twitter direct aanspreken en Richard Castle kan vervolgens op hen reageren. Deze nieuwe dimensie van PSI brengt een nog meer werkelijke onderdompeling in de wereld van CASTLE met zich mee. De grens tussen werkelijkheid en fictie lijkt hiermee nog meer te vervagen. Dit versterkt dan ook weer de band tussen de respondent en het karakter. Er wordt door de makers alles aan gedaan om de kijker een onderdeel van het verhaal te maken (of ze in ieder geval het gevoel te geven dat zij een onderdeel van het verhaal zijn). Er is dus echt sprake van een groei met een fundamentele ontwikkeling waarbij interactie tussen respondent en karakters mogelijk is.

Koppelen aan eigen leven

De respondenten in deze categorie koppelen gebeurtenissen of gevoelens van de karakters aan hun eigen leven. Hiermee willen ze aantonen hoe dicht ze bij een karakters staan of hoe goed ze de motieven en gedachtes van een karakters begrijpen.

“That has been in the back of my mind as well. It's not one of her good sides (!) but being a single child it tends to make sense. Most people I know that were single children are a lot like that as well. (R14)”

“To Seamus-I'm Irish American too!🥰”(R64)

“And I identify a bit with that too. I haven't had the type of tragic life she has, but I hide a lot of my feelings and keep people at a distance for fear of abandonment and disappointment and it's just nice to see someone struggling with that as well.” (R68)

“She'll be back Richard, all children (college bound adults too) return home for their once a year supply of peeps, I know, its been happening to me now for 5 years! Still haven't figured out why they can't buy them for themselves, lol!” (R127)

“I, for one, find her endlessly fascinating—flaws and all. Even though I'm a man, I was raised by a single mom and can identify with a lot of her issues and the overwhelming need to get some closure.” (R18)

Ook op het moment dat respondenten de gevoelens van een karakter koppelen aan hun eigen leven is identificatie zoals Cohen dat beschrijft (absorptie, het tijdelijk verdwijnen van de eigen identiteit) eigenlijk onmogelijk. Maar naar mijn idee liggen deze reacties dichterbij identificatie dan bij PSI. De respondenten zoeken duidelijk naar overeenkomsten tussen henzelf en een karakter uit de serie. Ze proberen zich in de schoenen van een van de personages te

verplaatsen. Hoewel dit dus niet overeenkomt met hoe Cohen identificatie beschrijft geven de respondenten zelf aan bepaalde overeenkomsten tussen een karakter en henzelf te zien.

Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Respondenten in deze subcategorie tonen of geven aan een bepaalde betrokkenheid met een of meerdere van de karakters uit de serie te voelen. Het tonen van betrokkenheid neemt meestal de vorm aan van het direct aanspreken van een karakter (iets wat door middel van de marketing strategie van ABC voor kijkers eenvoudig is geworden). Door de karakters direct aan te spreken wordt de afstand tussen de respondenten en de karakters verkleind (dit is ook een kenmerk van PSI).

“Richard Castle :-) Some people work for a living as Beckett would answer :-))”(R134)

“Luv u Castle!!!!”(R135)

“We know those were for Beckett, but what kind of coffee do you drink?”(R136)

“This gives me new ideas on what to write off next year. Thanks, Rick.”(R137)

“And Richard, why are you buying lattes when there is a perfectly good espresso machine in house now.... which I am sure was also deductible?”(R138)

“Don't complain about latte... btw, did you talk to Kate? stop behaving like a child.”(R139)

“I love Castle♥ Don't let Beckett know that your daily heartfelt gesture became a tax write off! Chicks don't dig that! Lol” (R140)

“Richard Castle, Would Just like to say.

You're Awesome. “ (R147)

“What are you doing!?!?! A flight attendant? Seriously talk to Beckett!!!

Please... save us all.....” (R144)

Op het moment dat de respondenten zelf aangeven zich betrokken te voelen, wordt als er al een verklaring hiervoor gegeven kan worden, meestal de reden gegeven dat de serie en karakters zo realistisch zijn. De respondenten lijken zichzelf daarmee in de wereld van Castle te plaatsen. Het gevolg hiervan is dat de grens tussen de werkelijkheid en fictie steeds minder duidelijk wordt voor de respondenten (zoals ook al bij “verwarring werkelijkheid” besproken).

“One of the hottest chicks on tv and a guy you can live vicariously through? What is there not to like from a guy's perspective? So what is Castle? What kind of show is it? For me, it's one of those rare shows that actually tell a story in a way that makes it feel... I don't know... human? Like these are events and people that could actually exist in the real world. Even though the characters aren't real, the connection I feel toward them is. The show accurately portrays life; that in which life is messy, dirty, and hard, but has rays of light that can turn into a bright day. Watching the end of the finale was one of those rays of light. I can't wait to watch that ray of light become a bright shining day.” (R63)

De respondenten hebben een vriendschapsband met de karakters: ze geven Castle advies, steun hem en hebben medeleven met hem. Er is dus duidelijk sprake van PSI. Wat hier echter opvalt is dat de vriendschapsband en het direct aanspreken nooit gericht is aan Kate Beckett maar bijna altijd naar Richard Castle. Dit natuurlijk omdat ze Richard Castle als enige direct kunnen aanspreken.

De bruiloft van Ryan en Jenny heeft ook voor een versterking in persoonlijke betrokkenheid van de respondenten met de karakters gezorgd. Hieronder volgt een kleine selectie uit de verzamelde reacties.

"Congratulations and Best Wishes to you both!" (R219)

"I'm looking forward to a wonderful time at your wedding! You will both look fabulous! Enjoy! Love the show and all of you - amazing chemistry!" (R220)

"Congrats, you two. Many happy years together :)" (R221)

*"Can't wait to see the wedding!
Hope there is some epic kissing! ;-)
LOVE the show!" (R222)*

"Congratulations! You two are beautiful together! I can't wait for the wedding - wishing you years of happiness!" (R223)

"Congratulations! Best wishes from Boston, MA!" (R224)

"Wish you a lifetime and beyond of happiness and love. Congrats." (R225)

"Congrats to the happy couple...."" (R226)

"Wishing you years of joy and love" (R227)

"Best wishes to the cutest couple ever from upstate NY :)" (R228)

"Congrats! I wish you all the best!" (R229)

Dit mediaevent wat door ABC georganiseerd is geeft de respondenten natuurlijk al helemaal het gevoel dat de karakters uit CASTLE echt bestaan en dat ze een persoonlijke band met de karakters hebben. Het zorgt ervoor dat de karakters erg toegankelijk zijn.

“Just as the show released Castle's books so that fans could feel they were reading his real work, the wedding website makes it seem more like a wedding is really going to happen and we are all invited.”³⁴

De kijkers hebben echt het gevoel gehad een onderdeel geweest te zijn van de bruiloft. Hiermee is de grens tussen werkelijkheid en fictie voor de respondenten vervaagd en krijgen zij het idee persoonlijk betrokken te zijn bij de bruiloft. De respondenten hebben niet alleen het gevoel in het leven van de karakters te kunnen kijken maar zij hebben ook de optie om een onderdeel van het verhaal te worden. Daarmee wordt de vriendschapsband tussen respondent en karakter versterkt.

Afbeelding 2: De huwelijkswebsite van Kevin en Jenny



³⁴ "Fans Invited Detective Kevin Ryan's Wedding" (2010) op Yahoo. <http://tv.yahoo.com/news/fans-invited-detective-kevin-ryans-wedding-castle-235600550.html> bezocht op 20-05-2012.

Intimiteit

Respondenten in deze subcategorie vormen een zeer intieme relatie met een of meerdere van de karakters uit de serie. Kenmerkend is daarbij dat de respondenten het daarbij altijd over zichzelf hebben in verhouding tot een karakter (de eigen ik van een respondent blijft dus intact). Waar persoonlijke betrokkenheid wat afstandelijker is, is intimiteit erg persoonlijk: respondenten zien de karakters niet alleen als vrienden maar meer als geliefde (of iemand waar ze ontzettend dichtbij staan). Intimiteit is dus eigenlijk een extremere vorm van persoonlijke betrokkenheid.

"Why oh why did he pick Jenny over me...?" (R312)

"Real or not, I have a total crush on Richard" (R313)

"I want to find a guy like Richard Castle. I want to find my one and done. Someone who will love me unconditionally. Girls we all want that" (R314)

"It is the family I like to think I belong to..." (R63)

"I just wanted to give her a big hug and tell her that it's okay. (also her saying she's ready. I totally called it!)" (R317)

"After last night, I am in love." (R318)

"...and yes, she has a perfect nose, a perfect mouth, perfect lips, etc., etc., etc! sheesh! There should be a law about someone looking so perfect. Everyone has something about them, that distracts the eye of the person looking at them, such as Nathan's crooked nose. 😊 Stana's eyes are beautiful and I can't help but be distracted by looking at her directly in the eyes. You can't help yourself. They draw you in, and you can't look away. This makes for a great interrogator!" (R3)"

"I don't think there is anything they could have her do that would make me turn against her." (R321)

*"I'm pretty sure we're all a little bit in *love* with Nathan!! Okay, maybe more than a little. Maybe a lot. Like, maybe we're obsessed. Just kidding. Or not. You decide. HA HA HA" (R322)*

"Well it probably doesn't help that I have a total girl crush on Beckett but I thought she was fantastic" (R23)

De reacties in deze subcategorie zijn daarmee haast stalkerig te noemen. Deze respondenten zijn onvoorwaardelijk verliefd geworden op een karakter uit de serie en laten dit merken ook. Soms doen zij dit door middel van het direct contact opnemen met een karakter en soms door dit in een groep met andere respondenten die dezelfde gevoelens hebben te bespreken. Hoewel er in mijn casus niet ontzettend veel van dit soort reacties waar te nemen zijn (23 in totaal), vind ik het wel ontzettend belangrijk om deze categorie te vermelden omdat ik denk dat deze categorie in verband staat met wat Horton & Wohl in hun artikel extreme PSI noemen (of wat Costello lange termijn identificatie noemt) . Horton & Wohl noemen dit een continue staat van identificatie waarin de kijker nog wel zijn eigen identiteit behoud. Ik denk dat mijn categorie intimiteit hier goed in past. De respondenten in deze categorie hebben vaak een obsessie met een karakter uit de serie en zullen dit denk ik in hun dagelijks leven moeilijk los kunnen laten. De respondenten hebben werkelijk het gevoel dat het karakter waardoor ze geobsedeerd zijn in hun wereld leeft en hebben een zeer persoonlijke liefdes band met dat karakter ontwikkeld.

Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

De respondenten in deze categorie hebben het gevoel of weten zeker te weten wat de karakters voelen (welke emoties ze hebben, welke doelen en wat hun perspectief op de wereld is). In welke mate zij dit gevoel hebben draagt bij aan intensiteit van de band die zij met een personage hebben. Er is hier een onderscheid te maken tussen het gevoel hebben een karakter te kennen en zeker te weten wat een karakter voelt zonder het te onderbouwen maar door het simpelweg te voelen. Voorbeelden van het eerste, namelijk het gevoel hebben een karakter te kennen zijn hieronder te lezen.

“As far as we know the last person she loved was Royce who betrayed her, so I think that reinforces the idea that she is putting up walls to protect her heart. “ (R329)

“Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but In the last scene between rick and kate, When he was saying "If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but i took it as he was saying i'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handfull, Did anyone else feel like this cause i think i might be crazy 😞 “ (R60)

“In Kill Shot when Rick rushes in saying he figured out the dolls, Gates immediately says Mr Castle we don't have time for your theatrics. But he replies Captain just listen and then shows that is wild theories can be useful. After that not only does she listen to him but also asks him for his opinion. She is seeing first hand how useful he can be and I think this is what will probably save him in the upcoming Mayor episode. (R39)”

“So far in the story we know that Richard Castle is in love with with Kate Beckett. But is Kate in love him? I know, i know we have the looks, the smiles, the kiss, and the lies but so far we have not gotten a confirmation” (R1)

"You really think they should've already done "it"? You really see frustration in either of them?? Actually, I can't. And why being so impatient with all of where and when this story is going? (R12)"

Deze respondententen denken te weten wat een karakter voelt maar dit leiden zij af aan een bepaalde gezichtsuitdrukking of iets wat in de serie door de karakters is gezegd. Deze respondententen lijken zich niet echt te identificeren maar meer af te gaan op wat ze in de afleveringen zelf te zien krijgen (ze willen bewijs uit de afleveringen). Aan de andere kant van deze groep staan de respondententen die gewoon zeker weten hoe een karakter zich voelt en daar geen verdere verklaring voor geven.

"Both Castle and Beckett are both flawed, emotional people who are trying to do the right thing. They aren't perfect, the relationship is messy, they're human. It's one of the reasons why I find this relationship and these characters so appealing." (R15)

"That part of the episode was put in to give us the "Oh No's" and it apparently worked. But at the end, Beckett didn't buy what Sophia was selling. She knew it was all a lie and that her relationship with Rick would be different. He told her so."(R325)

"I agree! in season 3 Kate & Castle used to go out to dinner now nothing. what happened kate stopped having a life after work.. castle was telling a story from a PI diary the blue butterfly was trying see kate's re-action, he was trying to judge her feelings towards him, but he did not get the response he was looking for. I don't believe a man will wait for ever unless given some incentive, she hasn't showed any interest in him season 4, no hug, no touch, she never shares her feelings, maybe she can say she loves him but that she has to take the relationship slow, until she can overcome her inner demons first before she can move forward with the relationship. All that I ask is that you be patient with me she can say to rick. why hasn't kate asked rick come over for dinner? I am surprised

that captain gates doesn't have castle take psych evaluation after almost drowned almost shot in the head that he is safe to be with the team. chances are he has studied some form of criminal psychology for his writing career, so he would know what to say to pass the psych eval anyway. I think rick is waiting for kate to make the first move. he has hinted his feelings now its up to kate..” (R54)

“Kate is finally letting Rick talk to her about those areas she has been protecting. She is not pushing him away now. (R5)”

“Kate is a complex character who has come to realize that she has to get her head on straight. She knows she has to put her mother's case to rest in order to move forward and be able to completely invest herself emotionally in a relationship... especially when it is the one relationship she really wants, with Castle. I think in her taking the time away, she did a lot of soul searching and has come to understand herself and her issues very well. The fact that she acknowledges the wall that prevents her from having the kind of relationship she wants is BIG for Kate. (And the fact that she said it out loud to Castle, blew me away.) She is trying to do the right thing in order to give THEM the best shot possible at making it work in the long run. She doesn't want them to fail because of this.” (R328)

Deze respondentent identificeren zich wel zeker met Kate Beckett. Ze voelen empathie voor het karakter, delen van de gevoelens van het karakter, delen het perspectief met het karakter en delen de doelen van het karakter (allen voorwaarden van identificatie). Ze hoeven geen bewijs te leveren voor de gevoelens van een karakter omdat zij zeker weten wat er in het hoofd van een karakter omgaat en ze deze gevoelens ook delen). In deze categorie respondentent is er dus wel zeker sprake van identificatie met een personage uit de serie. De eigen identiteit blijft echter in de meeste gevallen wel duidelijk

aanwezig: de respondenten blijven zichzelf maar kunnen wel exact vertellen wat een personage voelt (zoals hierboven meerdere malen te lezen is).

Wat er verder aan de reacties in deze categorie opvalt is dat bijna alle respondenten zich lijken te identificeren met Kate Beckett (het karakter wat in de serie haar gevoelens bijna niet laat zien) en dat er bijna geen reacties over Richard Castle op te merken zijn (hoewel we als kijker dit karakter volgen en daarmee constant in aanraking komen met zijn emoties en gevoelens). Wat ook opvalt is dat de veel van de reacties in deze subcategorie van respondenten zijn die veelvuldig gereageerd hebben en niet zomaar een keer iets gepost hebben.

Een opvallend moment in deze subcategorie, is als dat wat de respondenten zeker wisten wat een karakter voelde, opeens in een aflevering door de makers van de serie wordt tegengesproken.

“Some viewers understand what beckett is going through. Others are flat out furious at Kate for how she treated castle. Let's face it the hospital scene between them the fact she didnt call him and seemed not to be concerned about not talking to him until Ryan said something about files and not to mention the ily part.I think that for some reason the writers just rolled over Kate.” (R30)

“Me, personally, I believe that she really loves him and I do understand her behaviour, even if I don` t always like it or if I would approach some things differently... (R16)”

Dit duidt voor veel respondenten een (tijdelijk) einde van identificatie aan. Veel respondenten geven dan aan te (willen) stoppen met kijken. Deze respondenten gaan dan over van het begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter naar het niet begrijpen (zie hiervoor de volgende subcategorie). Deze overgang van volledig begrip van een personage naar het niet begrijpen van de gevoelens komt zeer vaak voor in mijn casus. De overgang lijkt samen te hangen met wat Cole & Leets in hun theorie over PSI een eigenschap van PSI noemen:

“Op het moment dat de afstand tussen het personage en de lezer dreigt te vergroten of zelfs afgebroken te worden zal er een vorm van protest van de kijker volgen.”³⁵

De respondent zal dus altijd proberen door middel van begrip de afstand tussen zichzelf en het personage te verkleinen en op het moment dat deze afstand lijkt te vergroten (als het karakter anders handelt dan gedacht) volgt een vorm van protest (in dit geval het dreigen met stoppen met de serie kijken). Wat hier dan weer de gevolgen van zijn is in de volgende categorie te lezen.

³⁵ Cole & Leets, 497- 498.

Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

De respondenten in deze categorie zijn of worden (bijvoorbeeld door iets wat een karakter in de serie zegt wat ze niet vinden kloppen met het idee wat ze van dat karakter hadden) afstandelijker. Ze begrijpen de gevoelens van de karakters niet zo goed (meer) . Dit heeft twee uitkomsten: ze vragen om hulp aan de andere respondenten die wel weten hoe een karakter zich voelt, om de afstand tussen het personage en henzelf weer te verkleinen of de afstand wordt nog groter en ze verliezen hun betrokkenheid met de karakters en de serie.

“It won't work, the show will fail and will be cancelled and that would make me sad as I really do enjoy all of the characters and so much of the writing etc. I am still grasping at the hope that Beckett's comment about "Sophia told a lot of lies" really does mean that she did not take Sophia's speech to heart but it just doesn't feel that way to me. I sure hope that I am 100% wrong about all this but I guess we'll just have to wait and see”(R49)

“I agree but I'm getting bored with them doing so only in subtext so the characters themselves can keep avoiding the actual subject. That's what leaves it to interpretation and it shouldn't. (R29)”

“When your mother refers to another person in your life as your better half, you are in a relationship. But we do not see any evidence of it besides the looks, innuendos and comments by other characters. I have no idea where the show goes from here, and right now, I no longer care. “ (R50)

“Let me ask you something Southrnbygrace, do you think Beckett can read Castle fairly well? What I mean is this, can she just look at him and know what he is thinking without having to ask? If she can, do you think she caught on to just how hurt he was in the hospital room when she claimed

she didn't remember? If you answer yes to any of those, then what kind of pressure do you think they she would have faced had she actually admitted to remembering? He would know that she knows he loves her, he has said it, and now she is having to deal with her being shot and being with Josh. How do you honestly think that ends? (R25)

“Certainly, when they first met there was fireworks, but in love at that point i don't know. That would make Beckett seem a bit strange to me. (R1)”

De betrokkenheid van deze respondenten met de karakters uit de serie is dus duidelijk enorm afgenomen. Zij hebben niet langer het gevoel te weten wat een karakter voelt en de afstand tussen hen neemt toe. Daarmee neemt de interesse in de serie af en stoppen ze uiteindelijk met kijken of ontstaat er een conflict tussen de kijker en het karakter (zie volgende subcategorie).

Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

Op het moment dat de respondenten aangeven de karakters niet zo goed meer te begrijpen ontstaat er soms een conflict tussen het karakter en de respondent. De respondenten geven echt aan boos op een karakter te zijn.

"I'm one of the ones that was furious with Kate and I think the character took a step backward not forward."

"Castle has been pretty much devoted to her for 3 years so if she doesn't trust him by now, she never will. So where most people saw growth, I saw her regressing. That may change with the coming episodes, I have no idea what's coming up. But I do agree, that IMO she owes Castle a HUGE apology, and just showing up at a book signing and telling him she broke up with Josh after 3 months of silence, didn't cut it for me."

"The way she treated him bugged me in the finale too... I don't know. I don't know if they were purposely portraying her like that or what they're trying to say. Bleh. I don't know."

Deze respondenten zijn vooral erg gefrustreerd omdat zij niet goed meer weten wat een karakter voelt terwijl zij dit wel altijd dachten te weten. Deze verwarring heeft tot gevolg dat de persoonlijke betrokkenheid afneemt, er ontstaat een meer afstandelijke relatie tussen de respondent en het karakter (er is dus ook geen sprake meer van identificatie). Het is voor deze respondenten de vraag of zij de afstand tussen henzelf en het personage weer kunnen verkleinen waardoor de persoonlijke band weer sterker wordt.

Conclusie

Welke conclusies zijn hier nu uit af te leiden? Aan het begin van mijn onderzoek heb ik twee onderzoeksvragen opgesteld:

Welke vormen van persoonlijke betrokkenheid met de fictieve personages uit de serie CASTLE zijn er in de reacties van de kijkers op de message boards te onderscheiden en hoe verhouden die zich tot elkaar?

Op welke wijze versterkt de multimediale marketing strategie van tie-in's de betrokkenheid van de kijker met de personages en gebeurtenissen in de serie televisieserie CASTLE?

Om antwoord te kunnen geven op de eerste vraag heb ik onderzocht welke verschillende vormen van betrokkenheid met de personages in de reacties waar te nemen waren. Door middel van het labelen van de reacties van de kijkers van de serie heb ik het kernthema "relatie van de lezer met een karakter" kunnen opstellen. Dit kernthema laat zien wat voor soort relatie te kijkers van de serie met de personages hebben. Wat bleek was dat er een hoge mate van betrokkenheid waar te nemen was. De band die de kijkers ontwikkelden was van zeer persoonlijke en in sommige gevallen ook van intieme aard. De intensiteit van deze band kan per persoon dus verschillen, waar de ene respondent een vriendschappelijke band met een of meerdere personages ontwikkeld, ziet de andere respondent zichzelf meer als een geliefde van een personage. Om deze band te versterken en de afstand tussen personage en respondent kleiner te maken, zoeken de respondenten vaak een koppeling van het personage met hun eigen persoonlijke leven. Daarbij is het zowel mogelijk dat de respondenten hun eigen identiteit houden en zichzelf in het verhaal van de serie plaatsen, als dat de respondenten de identiteit van een van de personages overnemen en zichzelf daarmee in het verhaal plaatsen. Maar ook andersom is het mogelijk, de respondenten kunnen de personages in hun eigen leven plaatsen en of een koppeling maken aan hun eigen leven.

Identificatie en PSI zijn daarbij twee begrippen die van belang zijn. Eigenlijk alle verschillende vormen van betrokkenheid die in de reacties van de respondenten door mij zijn gevonden, bevatten een kenmerk van ofwel identificatie of PSI. Hoewel er dus meerdere malen overeenkomsten zijn gevonden in zowel de theorie over identificatie als PSI, is voor mijn casus een aanpassing van beide concepten noodzakelijk.

Ondanks dat identificatie niet direct in mijn casus is waar te nemen (omdat identificatie ook tijdens het lezen van een tekst plaatsvindt en niet erna), zijn er wel vaak kenmerken van identificatie gevonden. Zo namen respondenten de rol van een van de karakters aan, wisten zij exact wat ze dachten of probeerden zij zich in de schoenen van een karakter te plaatsen. Hoewel de eigen ik dus niet altijd leek te verdwijnen in de reacties hadden de respondenten vaak wel een dergelijk begrip van een van de karakters dat het te typeren was als identificerend.

Veel vaker zijn er overeenkomsten gevonden met de theorie over PSI. Er wordt een continue relatie met een karakter gevormd. Deze relatie kan onderling verschillen in intensiteit: waar de één een vriendschappelijke band met een karakter ontwikkelt, ontwikkelt de ander een zeer intieme haast relationele band. Het grootste verschil tussen de theorie en mijn casus is echter het interactieve aspect, wat mede door de opkomst van social media nu mogelijk is geworden. Omdat nu dubbelzijdige interactie met een karakter mogelijk is, moeten er ook wat aanpassingen gemaakt worden in de theorie. Door middel van de marketingstrategie (Richard Castle is door de respondenten direct aan te spreken) is er nu wel degelijk een mogelijkheid tot dubbelzijdige interactie. De respondenten kunnen Richard Castle via facebook of twitter direct aanspreken en Richard Castle kan vervolgens op hen reageren. Deze nieuwe dimensie van PSI brengt een nog meer werkelijke onderdompeling in de wereld van Castle met zich mee. De grens tussen werkelijkheid en fictie lijkt hiermee nog meer te vervagen. Dit versterkt dan op zijn beurt ook weer de persoonlijke band tussen de respondent en het karakter. De marketingstrategie geeft de kijker het gevoel een onderdeel van het verhaal te zijn. Door middel van de toegankelijkheid van de

serie is dus echt sprake van een groei met een fundamentele ontwikkeling waarbij interactie tussen respondent en karakters mogelijk is.

Identificatie en PSI lijken ook zeker met elkaar verbonden te zijn. In mijn theoretisch kader had ik ook al gesteld dat deze twee begrippen aan elkaar verbonden te zijn en mijn onderzoek lijkt dit te bevestigen. Identificatie en PSI lijken ook een positief effect op elkaar te hebben. Waar identificatie meestal plaatsvindt tijdens het lezen van de tekst over CASTLE (afleveringen, boeken, social media, internet) en PSI meestal erna, versterken zij beide de persoonlijke band die tussen de respondent en het karakter gevormd wordt.

Wat bij persoonlijke betrokkenheid ten slotte erg belangrijk is, is het begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter. Dit is voor de persoonlijke band die een respondent met een personage ontwikkeld van levensbelang. Voor het ontwikkelen van een persoonlijke band is het voor de kijker noodzakelijk dat hij of zij begrijpt welke gevoelens en gedachten een personage heeft. Daarbij is het mogelijk dat de respondenten het gevoel hebben een karakter te kennen (wat meer op PSI wijst) als dat de respondenten zeker weten wat een karakter voelt (identificatie). Het begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter is in mijn onderzoek naar persoonlijke betrokkenheid de kernfactor te noemen.

Op het moment dat dit gevoel van het begrijpen van een karakter afneemt of stopt, zoals dat in de categorieën “Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter” en “Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker” het geval is, zal de afstand tussen de respondent en het personage toenemen en daarmee de persoonlijke betrokkenheid afnemen en eventueel zelfs stoppen. Op dit moment wordt het voor de kijker ook moeilijk om de serie te blijven volgen. Vaak is het gevolg dat men stopt (of i.i.g. dreigt met stoppen) met het kijken van de serie. Een andere mogelijkheid is dat de respondent tot een nieuw begrip van de gevoelens van een personage komt, de afstand weer verkleint en de persoonlijke betrokkenheid weer versterkt. Voordat persoonlijke betrokkenheid met de personages in een serie kan ontstaan is het dus noodzakelijk om het gevoel te hebben een personage te begrijpen.

Het antwoord op mijn tweede onderzoeksvraag, “Op welke wijze versterkt de multimediale marketing strategie van tie-in’s de betrokkenheid van de kijker met de personages en gebeurtenissen in de serie televisieserie CASTLE?”, is deels te beantwoorden naar aanleiding van mijn eerste vraag. Er is naar aanleiding van de vorige vraagstelling al vastgesteld dat er een hoge mate van betrokkenheid bij de personages en de gebeurtenissen in de serie is waar te nemen. Deze persoonlijke band wordt ondersteund en versterkt door de marketingstrategie die ABC voor de serie CASTLE heeft gebruikt. De strategie om Richard Castle als een persoon die werkelijk bestaat te laten overkomen door middel van het uitbrengen van zijn boeken, hem social media pagina’s en een eigen website te geven en de fans te mogelijkheid te geven hem echt te ontmoeten, dragen er allemaal aan bij dat de kijker in de war raakt over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de serie en er een duidelijke versterking in betrokkenheid van de kijker plaatsvindt. In het kernthema “werkelijkheid” komt duidelijk naar voren welk effect het gebruik van de tie-in’s in CASTLE op de respondenten heeft. Juist omdat respondenten op vele andere manieren dan de serie in contact kunnen komen met Richard Castle ontstaat er een verwarring over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de personages. Veel respondenten vertonen een soort van tweestrijd. Aan de ene kant kunnen ze eigenlijk wel dat Richard Castle niet echt bestaat maar toch hebben ze, omdat ze hem kunnen facebooken of twitteren, zijn boeken kunnen lezen of hem kunnen ontmoeten, het idee Richard Castle wel echt te kennen en zien hem toch wel als een bestaand persoon. Ook zijn er respondenten die niet begrijpen dat er respondenten zijn die geloven dat Richard Castle echt bestaat en het als hun taak zien om deze respondenten te onderwijzen over het feit dat Castle niet echt bestaat. Zij plaatsen zichzelf boven de respondenten die in de war zijn en proberen vaak op een zeer sarcastische wijze de respondenten te overtuigen van het feit dat Richard Castle een personage in een serie is en niet echt bestaat. Wat echter zeer opvallend is is dat de respondenten die in de war zijn over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de serie zelden op de reacties van de respondenten die hen willen wijzen op de werkelijkheid reageren. Deze neiging om de groep

respondenten die hen wil wijzen op de werkelijkheid te negeren en vervolgens gewoon verder te gaan alsof ze zich nog steeds niet bewust zijn van de werkelijkheid, is naar mijn mening intentioneel. Of dit intentioneel is omdat ze het echt geloven dat de karakters werkelijk bestaan of dat ze een bepaalde rol spelen om een band met een karakter te ontwikkelen is moeilijk bepalen omdat aanvullende informatie ontbreekt. Zelf denk ik dat veel van deze respondenten doen alsof ze geloven dat een karakter werkelijk bestaat (en daarmee het spel meespelen) om zich dichter bij de serie te voelen en een meer persoonlijkere band met een karakter kunnen ontwikkelen. De gebruikte tie-in's maken het voor de respondenten allereerst dus makkelijker om in aanraking te komen met de serie (men hoeft de serie niet te kijken om Richard Castle te kennen). Daarnaast zorgen de tie-in's ervoor dat de respondenten in de war raken over het werkelijkheidsgehalte van de personages en is er de mogelijkheid tot het vormen van een persoonlijke band.

De gebruikte mediastrategie heeft dus uiteindelijk op de respondenten in mijn casus een duidelijk effect: de betrokkenheid met de personages wordt makkelijker te realiseren en neemt persoonlijke vormen aan.

Maar wat betekenen deze onderzoeksresultaten nu in het algemeen? De mediastrategie die in CASTLE wordt gebruikt is namelijk nog zeer nieuw, er zijn momenteel vrij weinig andere series die gebruik maken van dergelijke tie-in's (er zijn er al helemaal geen die van alle tie-in's tegelijkertijd gebruik maken). Wat dit onderzoek laat zien is dat de marketingstrategie die in CASTLE gebruikt wordt een hoge mate van persoonlijke betrokkenheid tussen de respondenten en personages tot gevolg heeft. Er is dus een nieuw soort van persoonlijke betrokkenheid ontstaan, een betrokkenheid die niet eenzijdig gekenmerkt is maar waarin interactie centraal staat. Deze nieuwe vorm van betrokkenheid heeft op zowel maatschappelijk als wetenschappelijk niveau bepaalde gevolgen.

Op maatschappelijk niveau wordt de vraag opgewekt hoe het met de serie zal moeten aflopen. Veel van de kijkers van de serie hebben namelijk, mede doordat er door de makers alles aan gedaan wordt om de personages uit de serie zo werkelijk mogelijk over te laten komen, een zeer persoonlijke, vaak ook

vriendschappelijke band met hen ontwikkeld. De zender ABC heeft nu een grote verantwoordelijkheid om op het moment dat de serie zou eindigen de band tussen kijker en personage ook op een zo goed mogelijke manier te beëindigen.

Ook op wetenschappelijk niveau heeft dit onderzoek gevolgen. Het gebruik van tie-in's (en vooral de mogelijkheid tot het gebruik van social media) is tot nu toe nog in opkomst in fictionele televisieseries. Door middel van mijn onderzoek heb ik aangetoond dat de bestaande theorie omtrent persoonlijke betrokkenheid tussen kijker en personage, nog wel bruikbaar zijn, maar dat enige aanpassing vereist is. Verder empirisch onderzoek, of dit nu door middel van de analyse van discussies op messageboards en social media is of door middel van interviews of questionnaires, is in ieder geval noodzakelijk om de opkomst van deze nieuwe manier van persoonlijke betrokkenheid verder te kunnen analyseren en de theorie verder te kunnen onderbouwen.

Discussie

In deze discussie wil ik nu graag kort reflecteren op het onderzoek en het onderzoeksproces.

Hoewel het onderzoek naar tevredenheid is verlopen, zijn er wel een aantal kritische kanttekeningen te plaatsen en lijkt het bovendien noodzakelijk om vervolgonderzoek te doen om duidelijkere uitspraken te kunnen doen. Omdat er gekozen is voor het gebruik van bestaand materiaal is er informatie uit tweede hand vergaard en heb ik als onderzoeker nooit direct contact gehad met de respondenten. Hoewel dit als grote voordeel had dat de natuurlijke situatie van de forums niet verstoord werd, is het wel nadelig gebleken dat er geen directe vragen aan de respondenten gesteld konden worden. Hierdoor heb ik bepaalde opvallendheden niet verder kunnen uitwerken.

Zo is vervolgonderzoek, waarin het voor de onderzoeker ook mogelijk is om respondenten verdere vragen te stellen en niet alleen maar al bestaand materiaal te onderzoeken, noodzakelijk. Zo kan men tot een beter inzicht komen over hoe de persoonlijke betrokkenheid in elkaar zit en wat de mediastrategie van CASTLE voor effect heeft op de respondenten. In de categorie “verwarring werkelijkheid” werd er bijvoorbeeld geen duidelijk antwoord gevonden op de vraag waarom respondenten die de werkelijkheid negeren, de respondenten die de werkelijkheid juist wel zien, bijna volledig links late liggen. Door middel van het stellen van vragen aan de respondenten zou er een definitief antwoord op deze vraag gegeven kunnen worden. Ook kan men dan bijvoorbeeld onderzoeken waarom, als het gaat om persoonlijke betrokkenheid, respondenten eigenlijk alleen maar gericht zijn op Kate Beckett en niet Richard Castle, die toch door middel van de mediastrategie veel meer in het licht staat dan Kate Beckett.

Verder lijkt het mij noodzakelijk om mijn labelingsstructuur toe te passen op andere series die niet gebruik maken van een marketingstrategie zoals bij CASTLE en dan te kijken wat de overeenkomsten en verschillen zijn. Of om de labelingstructuur juist toe te passen op andere non fictie series die van

soortgelijke marketingmethodes gebruik maken en daar te kijken naar de overeenkomsten en verschillen. Zo kan uiteindelijk bepaald worden of mijn labelingstructuur en de resultaten van mijn onderzoek geldig zijn.

Verder onderzoek is dus zeker nodig om tot een duidelijkere definitie van persoonlijke betrokkenheid te komen.

Literatuurlijst

Beneden, P. van. *“Viewer ‘identification’ with media characters in television and film fiction.”* Proefschrift voor de Universiteit van Western Australia, 1998.

Cohen, Jonathan. *Audience identification with media characters*. Londen: Routledge, 2006.

Cohen, Jonathan. “Defining Identification: A Theoretical Look at the Identification of Audiences With Media Characters.” *Mass Communication and Society* 4 (2001): 245-264.

Cohen, Jonathan. “Parasocial relations and romantic attraction: Gender and dating status differences.” *Journal of Broadcasting and Electronic Media* 41 (1997): 516–529.

Cole, T. & Leets, L. “Attachment styles and intimate television viewing: insecurely forming a relationship in a parasocial way.” *Journal of Social and Personal Relationships* 16 (1999): 395-511.

Costello, Victor. *Interactivity and the “Cyber-Fan”: an Exploration of Audience Involvement within the Electronic Fan Culture of the Internet*. Proefschrift voor de Universiteit van Tennessee.

Hoffman, C. & Cantor, J. “Developmental Differences in Responses to a Television Character’s Appearance and Behavior.” *Developmental Psychology* 21 (1985): 1065-1074.

Jenkins, Henry. *Textual Poachers: Television Fans & Participatory Culture*. Londen: Routledge, 1992.

Lewis, Lisa A. *The Adoring Audience: Fan Culture and Popular Media*. Londen: Routledge, 1992.

Livingstone, Sonia. M. *Making sense of television: The psychology of audience interpretation*. New York: Routledge, 1998.

Oatley, Keith. “A taxonomy of the emotions of literary response and a theory of identification in fictional narrative.” *Poetics* 23 (1994): 53–74.

Oatley, K. “Meeting of minds: Dialogue, sympathy, and identification in reading fiction.” *Poetics* 26 (1999): 439–454.

Press, A. “Class and gender in the hegemonic process: Class differences in women’s perceptions of television realism and identification with television characters.” *Media, Culture and Society* 11 (1989): 229–251.

Zillmann, D. "Mechanisms of emotional involvement with drama." *Poetics* 23 (1994): 33–51.

Bijlage 1: Social media pagina's Richard Castle



Bijlage 2: Codering, labeling en reductie van de citaten

tyler

Hi all,

So far in the story we know that Richard Castle is in love with with Kate Beckett. But is Kate in love him? I know, i know we have the looks, the smiles, the kiss, and the lies but so far we have not gotten a confirmation.

Opmerking [S1]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Stana did say that Kate is in love with Castle in her interviews, the problem is the word AM use in his is "really care for". So..I'm wondering whether Kate at this point (S3E11) thinks/knows that she is in love with RC or is she unsure?

Opmerking [S2]: Fandom

Because it could be at this point she does care about him and like him, like him. But does she love him right back?

Opmerking [S3]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S4]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

~~PS: About AM interview if he did say that KB is in love with RC somewhere can you guys link. I might have missed the interview.~~

~~December 31, 2011~~

~~9:57 am~~

AlwaysKate11

I think that she is absolutely in love with him.

~~However, I don't know if she realizes it completely yet because until now she hasn't even let herself open herself to that possibility. I think she recognizes that she has strong feelings for him and that he is the one she is willing to break down her wall for.~~

She knows that he makes her laugh, is very loyal to her, supports her, is her best friend and partner and I would go so far as to say she thinks of him as family. And she knows how he feels about her.

Opmerking [S5]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

The wall is coming down and when it does I think that she will fully recognize the feelings she has as love.

Opmerking [S6]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

~~As frustrating as the waiting is, I love that she puts Castle in a different category than any other guy. That she isn't in a true relationship with him because she knows there is something different there.~~

Can't wait til she figures it out.

Opmerking [S7]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid.

~~December 31, 2011~~

~~12:56 pm~~

FillKat

Hard Core Castle Groupie

She is insanely in love with him. She has been since before they ever met.

Her feelings for Castle started with his books and how they pulled her from the difficulties of dealing with her mothers murder. Her annoyance with him in the beginning, IMO, was all about how he turned out to not quite be the guy she had imagined he was, from his books....yet, there was a strong attraction. Why on earth would she continue to put up with him, if not? Yes she did try on a couple occasions to get him booted, but that was out of frustration, not a real desire to have him gone and out of her life. The level of emotion and respect she feels for him, is what scares her. She's run from it as hard and as fast as she can, but she realizes it isn't going away, nor is he. He has gone out of his way to prove himself to her, to prove he is someone she can count on and trust. He has never abandoned her, no matter what she has thrown at him. His character and charm have slowly worn her down and she can no longer deny what she has felt for him all along.

Those are my 2 cents on the issue 😊

Fitch

~~December 31, 2011~~

~~2:32 pm~~

FillKat

Fitch said:

I think you nailed it.

So: Hey! Castle! Kiss the girl already!

He needs to do more than just kiss her! They both need to throw caution to the wind and let loose of all that pent up frustration and angst. BTW, I think Castle is waiting for her. The ball has been in her court since the ILY and she now has to make the next move. He's already kissed her (although she did kiss him back), and he's already said ILY. It's her turn.

I think whatever happens next, it will be coming from her and I don't think it will be a simple peck on the cheek neither. At least I hope not. 😊 I think something big will happen, but afterward, they realize they need to back up a bit and procede slowly, figuring things out as they happen. Keeping it honest and true to who they both are.

~~December 31, 2011~~

~~2:54 pm~~

Fitch

FillKat said:

Fitch said:

Opmerking [S8]: Delen van het perspectief en doelen van een karakter

Opmerking [S9]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S10]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S11]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S12]: Voorspelling

I think you nailed it.

So: Hey! Castle! Kiss the girl already!

He needs to do more than just kiss her! They both need to throw caution to the wind and let loose of all that pent up frustration and angst. BTW, I think Castle is waiting for her. The ball has been in her court since the ILY and she now has to make the next move. He's already kissed her (although she did kiss him back), and he's already said ILY. It's her turn.

I think whatever happens next, it will be coming from her and I don't think it will be a simple peck on the cheek neither. At least I hope not. 😊 I think something big will happen, but afterward, they realize they need to back up a bit and procede slowly, figuring things out as they happen. Keeping it honest and true to who they both are.

What you said works for me! I don't care which one of them initiates it, though I agree with you it's Beckett's turn, and sooner is better.

I like your second paragraph a lot. I wouldn't be surprised if you have it exactly right. It's at consistant with how AM has been developing their relationship. But there's no going back from that either. It's another irreversable click forward.

"For a successful technology, reality must take precedence over public relations, for nature cannot be fooled." — R. Feynman in the Feynman appendix to to the Challenger report. "It's Not Our Abilities That Show What We Truly Are. It's Our Choices." — By Unknown to me.

December 31, 2011

4:11 pm

PrettyFloralBonnet

She's definitely "in love with him" and loves him (not the same thing)—both of which I think are needed for a long-term relationship. She's been attracted to him from the start, has loved him as her best friend since at least early Season 3, and I think has been "in love" since at least the infamous "Knockdown" kiss. Yes, that kiss was intended for cover (but really, really? were Rick's motives that pure or was he seizing the day?), but I think it blew up in their faces, and Kate kissing Rick back was all about being lost in the moment.

I think her face in the bank vault scene in "Cops and Robbers" was so revealing, as was the way she caressed his lapel (that was so sweet!). Darn Martha anyway and her crappy timing.

Kate's pushing through some major personal barriers in her life in order to be with Rick in a healthy relationship, and it's hard, painful work. Heck yeah, she loves him!

"The joy comes in the journey." — Rick Castle — 3x06 —

December 31, 2011

11:43 pm

tyler

Opmerking [S13]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S14]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

lol..... ok here's the thing about the responses. Yeah, we as the audience know that Beckett is already head over heels in love with castle. But my question is more on whether Beckett the character knows that she is already in love with the guy?

Or is the character still in denial on the love part and Castle is this guy who she really cares about, a guy who she really really like and wants to be with still.

There is absolutely no doubt in my mind that she is already in love with him. But based on the story line has the character accepted that she's already in love with the guy? During some interview in end season 2 Stana said something along the line that you really really like the guy and you think that he feels the same way and you wanted to explore that. I can't say its a conclusive thing that Beckett knows that she is already in love with Castle.

Opmerking [S15]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S16]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S17]: Fandom

January 1, 2012
12:16 am

He-Touches-Things

Hard Core Castle Groupie

tyler said:

lol..... ok here's the thing about the responses. Yeah, we as the audience know that Beckett is already head over heels in love with castle. But my question is more on whether Beckett the character knows that she is already in love with the guy?

Or is the character still in denial on the love part and Castle is this guy who she really cares about, a guy who she really really like and wants to be with still.

There is absolutely no doubt in my mind that she is already in love with him. But based on the story line has the character accepted that she's already in love with the guy. During some interview in end season 2 Stana said something along the line that you really really like the guy and you think that he feels the same way and you wanted to explore that. I can't say its a conclusive thing that Beckett knows that she is already in love with Castle.

~~*Disclaimer: English is not my 1st language forgive me if i use the wrong words or my sentences is a bit confusing. Words with the same sound confuse me sometimes. I'm an analyst by profession and would describe myself as a 'creatively challenge' sort of person, i do better with numbers.~~

No need to apologize. I think you said (typed, actually [Image Can Not Be Found]) it quite well. I do not think the character of Kate Beckett would admit out loud that she is already in love with Rick. However, I do think she is still struggling in silence with her subconscious yearnings, and is almost ready to admit to herself. I think she will take longer to admit it to anyone else, particularly Rick. He will probably be the last to hear it spoken out loud.

Opmerking [S18]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 1, 2012
5:16 am

EmVee

Ok I'm from Australia and I've only seen up to the end of season 3 so I don't have the insights you all have from season 4 to work with here. Here's my two cents worth

Castle is absolutely, totally in love with Kate. We all heard him say it at the end of S3 but we all knew it before then. In the beginning he was quite the smitten kitten with her and saw her as 'the absolute conquest' but once he got to know her he really fell in love. There's nothing he wouldn't do for her. Watching his face whenever Kate was with Dr Motorcycle Boy said it all.

Opmerking [S19]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Kate, deep down she loves Castle as much as Castle loves her, she's just not ready to admit it to herself and is spending every ounce she has denying it to herself and everyone around her. IMO maybe she feels if she gives in to her feelings for him she will lose him like she lost her mother. I also think she probably loved Royce a lot more than she ever admitted and losing him first as her mentor, then her friend when he betrayed her and then when he was murdered directly affects her relationship with Castle too as the hurt cut very deep. I don't think she could face the prospect of possibly losing Castle in one way or another. I think the kiss was a big revelation for Kate. She had had a major crush on Castle long before they ever met and then was surprised by him in the pilot with his naughty boy ways. Castle surprises her even more now though, in a good way, as she knows who he is. He's always there, he's loyal, he loves Alexis and Martha, he's her best friend and above all she trusts him implicitly. I think it surprised her more than anyone when she kissed him back. I think she was secretly as 'amazed' by the kiss as Castle was but again would never admit it. On the other hand she had been waiting for him to make the first move because she never would because that would require letting her guard down. Hopefully it won't take nearly losing Castle for her to realise that she can't lose him and has to be with him.

Opmerking [S20]: delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I'm really looking forward to the changing dynamic between Castle and Kate when they do get together(eventually). I honestly think the relationship will work very well because they are soul mates, they've spent so much time getting to know each other properly and have gone through so much together. Like any relationship they will have their moments of tension and ups and downs but it will be interesting to see how they both grow together as a couple. I don't see the 'Moonlighting Curse' being an issue here.

Opmerking [S21]: Voorspelling

January 1, 2012

5:49 pm

Nev827

~~AlwaysKate11 said:~~

~~I think that she is absolutely in love with him.~~

-

~~However, I don't know if she realizes it completely yet because until now she hasn't even let herself open herself to that possibility. I think she recognizes that she has strong feelings for him and that he is the one she is willing to break down her wall for.~~

~~She knows that he makes her laugh, is very loyal to her, supports her, is her best friend and partner and I would go so far as to say she thinks of him as family. And she knows how he feels about her.~~

The wall is coming down and when it does I think that she will fully recognize the feelings she has as love.

As frustrating as the waiting is, I love that she puts Castle in a different category than any other guy. That she isn't in a true relationship with him because she knows there is something different there.

Can't wait til she figures it out.

I agree completely. There's a quote I heard a while ago in a movie that goes something like this: It's easy to love someone. The hard part is having the courage to let that person love you back. I think that's what is holding Beckett back. She knows she loves him, but she's afraid of letting him into her heart entirely for several reasons: she's been hurt, his history, his ex-wives, possibly the fact that he has a daughter, etc.

It seems her therapist will help her get through it all though. She'll figure it out.

"Make you a deal," she said. "I'll watch my ass, you watch the crowd." — Nikki Heat in Heat Wave

January 2, 2012

12:34 am

tyler

Hmmm... so based on the response on the topic. I think generally everyone agrees that..

1) Yes Beckett is in love with Castle.

2) AND Yes Beckett has not accepted / completely realize it yet.

Post on if you guys disagree/agree with the 2 points.

January 2, 2012

3:16 am

AimedForHisHead

She is in love and it's a very deep love, the kind that lasts a lifetime.

She is willing to change her entire life, her entire being for him and that's huge for a person who's been in denial and a standstill for many years after a traumatic experience. She wasn't pushed, coerced or forced in any way to change.. she does it out of her free will because the prize is worth it.

Castle's hand was forced when Kate was shot.. he thought it may be the last moments with her and his "I love you" would somehow give her the strength to pull through and he wanted to bring it out in the open even if it were the last thing she ever hears.

That final moment is not quite there for Kate but deep down she loves him.. probably for quite some time (at least somewhere season 3, if not even earlier) and she just needs that critical mass to assemble before she can admit it publicly and move on with him.

Opmerking [S22]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S23]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S24]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

~~And boy will i scream like a fangirl when i see that on the screen (and i'm a 36 year old guy!)~~

January 2, 2012

11:41 am

waldkind

yes, she is in love with him and yes, she is very aware of it! I think she realized it during the whole Demming/Hamptons desaster. You don't break up with a guy for a man you have only a crush on. She didn't want to go to the Hamptons with Castle as "best friends" having a nice weekend (although I'm sure that was Castle's only intention). To me, her love was quite obvious in the end of season 2 and season 3. And she hides it very well in season 4!

Opmerking [S25]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 2, 2012

11:50 am

little eve

waldkind said:

~~yes, she is in love with him and yes, she is very aware of it! I think she realized it during the whole Demming/Hamptons desaster. You don't break up with a guy for a man you have only a crush on. She didn't want to go to the Hamptons with Castle as "best friends" having a nice weekend (although I'm sure that was Castle's only intention). To me, her love was quite obvious in the end of season 2 and season 3. And she hides it very well in season 4!~~

Totally agree, she has known for quite some time and now she has admitted it to herself but is not ready to call it from the rooftops quite yet. Her great hesitation is a sign of how deep her feelings are.

Opmerking [S26]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

"Just waiting for my partner. Maybe you've seen her. Pretty girl. Thinks she can leap tall buildings in a single bound, carries the weight of the world on her shoulders, yet still manages to laugh at some of my jokes." — Castle, 4x09

January 2, 2012

12:30 pm

Carrie

waldkind said:

~~yes, she is in love with him and yes, she is very aware of it! I think she realized it during the whole Demming/Hamptons desaster.~~

~~I second that.~~ I also think she understood that she's in love with Castle in the last episode of the 2nd season. I guess it happened as soon as she realized that she is going to loose him — during that very powerfully acted, heart-wrenching scene where he tells her that this would be their last case, and a bit later, when Esposito suggests that Castle may be gone for good and won't return at all, and then she looks longingly at his empty chair. It's clear (at least, for me), that these are the moments of epiphany for her, when she finally recognizes her true feelings, as she just can't ignore them any

longer. The pain that she is feeling tells her all about it. And when the next morning he appears with just one coffee in hand, her reaction is that of a woman in love. From psychological point of view I think it's rather realistic, as people often recognise their true feelings towards someone when there's a real threat that they are losing this person for good. I love Jane Austen, and she does that to her heroines, too, at least for Elizabeth Bennett and Emma ("...never had she so honestly felt that she could have loved him, as now, when all love must be vain.")

Opmerking [S27]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

So as far as I see it, Kate knew she was in love with him by the end of season 2. But when Castle left with Gina for the whole summer, and then failed to call her back in the autumn, I guess, she just buried these feelings deep inside her and forbade herself even to think in this direction anymore. She even started to date someone else, to prove to herself (and to Castle, of course) that she doesn't care. It seemed totally right and safe decision at the time, since even when he did come back after all, he was still with Gina. Things started to be more complicated when he broke up with Gina. When Kate overheard that conversation, her face at that moment was very telling — she was scared. She was scared because she knew it would be much more difficult for her to fight her feelings for him from now on, when he was free again. And there was hope again, too — but this time she knew she would need a concrete proof that it was safe for her to love him — and that's why she starts to ask him these questions during their serious talks, when she calls him by first name ("Why are you keep coming back, Rick?", "And what about you, Rick? Is that what we are?") She just needs to know, to hear, to get this confirmation from him. So when she finally gets it, she already knows her own feelings, she just realizes that she's not in that emotional state right now when she can fully abandon herself to these feelings and truly commit to them, and this is what she so desperately wants. And she's working on that at the moment, she's working really hard and is making good progress. Because she loves him so much and doesn't want to blow things up with him. That's how I see Kate's feelings and self-awareness.

Opmerking [S28]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 2, 2012

1:38 pm

1-and-done

little eve said:

waldkind said:

yes, she is in love with him and yes, she is very aware of it! I think she realized it during the whole Demming/Hamptons disaster. You don't break up with a guy for a man you have only a crush on. She didn't want to go to the Hamptons with Castle as "best friends" having a nice weekend (although I'm sure that was Castle's only intention). To me, her love was quite obvious in the end of season 2 and season 3. And she hides it very well in season 4!

Totally agree, she has known for quite some time and now she has admitted it to herself but is not ready to call it from the rooftops quite yet. Her great hesitation is a sign of how deep her feelings are.

Yes, totally agree with you two.

She's deeply in love with Rick and she's definitely aware of it since end of season 2. I think, she realized it but didn't trust her feelings then, was then distracted by all the events happening, but as

she saw that she could rely on him no matter what, these feelings grew immensely above all she experienced until then and last, but not least, she's heard him confessing his love for her and then she knew that her feelings weren't one-sided. That put her in a tricky position. She knew she wasn't that open and easy to get to know (told him so in 2x24, so she's aware of herself) but I think for to succeed in this (love-)case she knew she has to work on herself (to be one day as open to someone as he is). And working on this with a therapist is (only my 2 cents) a declaration of love as un-openly as she can profess to it right now. But working with a therapist wasn't just the consequence of the life-threatening events... I think it evolved from "the talk" and was deepened through his ILY (or why else she was going back for reconsulting Dr. Burke after she was declared ready for active duty in Rise?). And in the swing scene I think she told him in her way that she's willing to change for the relationship that she wants with him.

Opmerking [S29]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I really don't believe that she's not aware of her feelings for him because if she's able to recognize that she's only with "one foot in" in her relationship with Josh (again, that says: aware of herself) then she's definitely able to recognize feelings of true love. I think that the audience is still doubting her feelings because she hasn't shown them openly enough until now. She first has to learn how to be open. And as long as she hasn't learned it yet completely she won't confess it with words or actions.

Opmerking [S30]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter: ziet zichzelf niet als the audience

Whatttt?

January 2, 2012

1:53 pm

sonnenschein77

Carrie said:

waldkind said:

yes, she is in love with him and yes, she is very aware of it! I think she realized it during the whole Demming/Hamptons desaster-

I second that. I also think she understood that she's in love with Castle in the last episode of the 2nd season. I guess it happened as soon as she realized that she is going to loose him — during that very powerfully acted, heart wrenching scene where he tells her that this would be their last case, and a bit later, when Esposito suggests that Castle may be gone for good and won't return at all, and then she looks longingly at his empty chair. It's clear (at least, for me), that these are the moments of epiphany for her, when she finally recognizes her true feelings, as she just can't ignore them any longer. The pain that she is feeling tells her all about it. And when the next morning he appears with just one coffee in hand, her reaction is that of a woman in love. From psychological point of view I think it's rather realistic, as people often recognise their true feelings towards someone when there's a real threat that they are loosing this person for good. I love Jane Austen, and she does that to her heroines, too, at least for Elizabeth Bennett and Emma ("...never had she so honestly felt that she could have loved him, as now, when all love must be vain.")

So as far as I see it, Kate knew she was in love with him by the end of season 2. But when Castle left with Gina for the whole summer, and then failed to call her back in the autumn, I guess, she just

buried these feelings deep inside her and forbade herself even to think in this direction anymore. She even started to date someone else, to prove to herself (and to Castle, of course) that she doesn't care. It seemed totally right and safe decision at the time, since even when he did come back after all, he was still with Gina. Things started to be more complicated when he broke up with Gina. When Kate overheard that conversation, her face at that moment was very telling — she was scared. She was scared because she knew it would be much more difficult for her to fight her feelings for him from now on, when he was free again. And there was hope again, too — but this time she knew she would need a concrete proof that it was safe for her to love him — and that's why she starts to ask him these questions during their serious talks, when she calls him by first name ("Why are you keep coming back, Rick?", "And what about you, Rick? Is that what we are?") She just needs to know, to hear, to get this confirmation from him. So when she finally gets it, she already knows her own feelings, she just realizes that she's not in that emotional state right now when she can fully abandon herself to these feelings and truly commit to them, and this is what she so desperately wants. And she's working on that at the moment, she's working really hard and is making good progress. Because she loves him so much and doesn't want to blow things up with him. That's how I see Kate's feelings and self-awareness.

Great post! And I completely agree! You basically wrote, what I think...

January 2, 2012

2:13 pm

FillKat

I would argue, she has known from the very beginning. Maybe not completely, but she has known from the very first episode, she has strong feelings for this guy. She has given all of us, IMO, the impression as Castle said, " she's a little bit slutty", in that if given an opportunity to be with a guy she is attracted to, and he with her, she will take advantage of the mutual attraction. She has shown us, all along, she has not been interested in long term relationships. To be with someone she feels 'safe' with, means someone she couldn't possibly be 'serious' with. He gave her an opportunity to be with him at the end of Flower's For Your Grave, and she refused. Why? Because she has known from the beginning of her strong feelings and attraction for him, but not willing to accept those feelings.

Opmerking [S31]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

She could have passed on the interviewing of Castle to Ryan or Esposito in this episode, but she did it herself, to meet the man, the author, herself. While I stated earlier, (IMO) he turned out to be different than she expected, she became annoyed with this, thus her annoyance with him and some of his behaviors. She also respected his talents and quickly came to respect him, warts and all. She had and still has concerns about some of his past, ex-wives, and philandering behavior. I think over the years he has proven himself to be honest, trustworthy, even noble. She still has questions about what happened to his ex-wives. Did he cheat, lie, etc? Was it his fault? What did he do, or not do to cause the separation/divorce? She does trust him, with her life, literally! But, she still needs to know what happened to his previous marriages, to satisfy any lingering doubts about whether she can totally commit to him, to a serious (one and done) relationship with Richard Castle.

Opmerking [S32]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

As she said on the swings, the wall she has up has prevented her from being totally herself, to be the person she wants to be, to have the kind of relationship she wants to have. She has known this all along, and this is why she did not allow herself to be with Castle in the very first episode, to even

~~allow herself (except in her dreams) to think of being with him. To do so, would not be honest, would be contrary to herself, who she is, and what matters to her.~~

~~I would argue, she has loved him from the moment she met him, and possibly before that.~~

January 2, 2012

2:16 pm

sn02py

Good insights, everyone.

I think Beckett has had feelings for Castle for a very long time, and has been aware of them, at least since the Season 2 finale. In the Season 3 premiere, you see her missing Castle and protecting her heart when he tries to weasel himself in. I think in the end, she realizes that she likes having him around enough to bury her feelings.

I also think Kate fully accepted that she was in love with Castle in the LA episode. She knew what she wanted to say on that couch and when she walked away, she knew she hurt him. You can see in the way she looks at Castle on the plane as she's reading Royce's letter that there was no denial there, just acceptance. Not necessarily acceptance in a "I'm going to act on it now" kind of way, but I don't think she was in any way denying to herself those feelings.

What I think we're seeing this year (and even in Knockout) is a Kate who knows she's in love, but doesn't know how to be in love. She is so used to being strong and independent, and pushing people away when things get tough (ie. her mom's case, Montgomery's death, PTSD) that she hasn't yet accepted that part of being in love with someone is letting that person in, even when you're not at your best. Every time you see her begin to let herself get a bit emotional in front of Castle (which will happen if you're around someone you love), you also see her just as quickly trying to save face and pushing him away. I'm hoping for the rest of the season that, at very least, we'll see Kate begin to willingly let Castle in, confide in him more, and not push him away when things get tough (of course, I hope for more than that, but at very least, this is what I'd like to see). I'm optimistic about this because we know that Kate knows that she keeps one foot out the door in her relationships, and that, as per Killshot, she's ready to "be more" that that person. She just has to learn how!

Opmerking [S33]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S34]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S35]: Advies geven

Opmerking [S36]: Wensen

~~I don't think, at this point, either Castle or Beckett are in denial of their love for each other, to themselves, or really to each other. They just aren't acting on them at the moment...~~

January 2, 2012

2:30 pm

FillKat

~~sn02py said:~~

.....

What I think we're seeing this year (and even in Knockout) is a Kate who knows she's in love, but doesn't know how to be in love. She is so used to being strong and independent, and pushing people away when things get tough (ie. her mom's case, Montgomery's death, PTSD) that she hasn't yet accepted that part of being in love with someone is letting that person in, even when you're not at your best. Every time you see her begin to let herself get a bit emotional in front of Castle (which will happen if you're around someone you love), you also see her just as quickly trying to save face and pushing him away. I'm hoping for the rest of the season that, at very least, we'll see Kate begin to willingly let Castle in, confide in him more, and not push him away when things get tough.

I don't think, at this point, either Castle or Beckett are in denial of their love for each other, to themselves, or really to each other. They just aren't acting on them at the moment...

I agree with what you have said here. Also, I think she has already started to let him in, as she has started to show some of her emotions with him already.

January 2, 2012

2:34 pm

walldkind

carrie: good post, that's basically what I wanted to say but couldn't 😊 And Sn02py: I agree with you about the LA episode. BTW what would she have said if he hadn't gone back to his room? She probably didn't even know herself what to say but decided to face their situation somehow. Oh Castle... 😊

(and for me the only reason that those two aren't already planning their next holiday together is that this is a tv show, not some walls or being afraid to love or whatever)

FillKat said:

I would argue, she has known from the very beginning. Maybe not completely, but she has known from the very first episode, she has strong feelings for this guy. She has given all of us, IMO, the impression as Castle said, "she's a little bit slutty", in that if given an opportunity to be with a guy she is attracted to, and he with her, she will take advantage of the mutual attraction.[...]

I would argue, she has loved him from the moment she met him, and possibly before that.

I agree, I think she knew that there was more than just physical attraction. She was in love with his books before she even knew him and I also think that if she had absolutely NOT wanted to work with him there would have been no way that Montgomery could have forced her. But are you saying that if she had only been attracted to him (and nothing else) she would have slept with him after her first case? Because I don't think so, I think she really wouldn't like to be conquest number XY.

January 2, 2012

3:00 pm

FillKat

walldkind said:

Opmerking [S37]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

..... But are you saying that if she had only been attracted to him (and nothing else) she would have slept with him after her first case? Because I don't think so, I think she really wouldn't like to be conquest number XY.

I think, if she did not know Castle, or have the pre-existing feelings about him, she would have allowed herself to be one of his conquest, as he would have been hers too.

I don't think she is with a guy, just for the sake of sex, although I would say, she has had a one night stand here and there. As Ellen Degeneres once said (before she met Portia), "I'm a serial monogamist." I think Beckett has chosen men she is comfortable spending time with. Men who can tolerate her independence, her controlling nature, who are willing to be with her, when it is convenient for her, and I don't think she is with anyone else, when she is spending time with these guys, BUT she has chosen men, she knows she can't and/or won't commit to for any length of time.

I think Castle would have fit that criteria, at that time. He didn't know her, and if she had allowed herself to be with him at that time, and with Castle being the guy he was then, it would not have lasted. Either, because she kept him out, or because he got too close. She wasn't ready for him, and he wasn't ready for her, at that time.

Opmerking [S38]: Begrijpen het perspectief/doelen van een karakter

January 2, 2012

3:02 pm

sn02py

FillKat said:

I agree with what you have said here. Also, I think she has already started to let him in, as she has started to show some of her emotions with him already.

I agree. We've seen it a few times this season (in her apartment in Rise, her freezing at the gun her jealousy in Eye of the Beholder), but we've also seen her pushing him away (Killshot). She's still fighting those tendencies she has to go it alone! I think she came to the realization that you can't love someone and have them love you back, and not let them be there for you. I don't think we would have seen the Kate of previous seasons say "Thank you for giving me the space that I needed to get through this" — because in doing so she was basically admitting that she was going through a time of weakness. I really think Killshot was huge in the Beckett/Castle relationship (funny, since we didn't see a ton of them together), because you can just see Kate in that last scene (pre-therapist) thinking "Ah crap...he really does love me and I'm hurting him...I need to work on me."

Opmerking [S39]: Delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 2, 2012

3:07 pm

waldkind

FillKat said:

waldkind said:

..... But are you saying that if she had only been attracted to him (and nothing else) she would have slept with him after her first case? Because I don't think so, I think she really wouldn't like to be conquest number XY.

I think, if she did not know Castle, or have the pre-existing feelings about him, she would have allowed herself to be one of his conquest, as he would have been hers too.

I don't think she is with a guy, just for the sake of sex, although I would say, she has had a one night stand here and there. As Ellen Degeneres once said (before she met Portia), "I'm a serial monogamist." I think Beckett has chosen men she is comfortable spending time with. Men who can tolerate her independence, her controlling nature, who are willing to be with her, when it is convenient for her, and I don't think she is with anyone else, when she is spending time with these guys, BUT she has chosen men, she knows she can't and/or won't commit to for any length of time.

I think Castle would have fit that criteria, at that time. He didn't know her, and if she had allowed herself to be with him at that time, and with Castle being the guy he was then, it would not have lasted. Either, because she kept him out, or because he got too close. She wasn't ready for him, and he wasn't ready for her, at that time.

ah okay, that makes sense and I can agree with that! And I love Ellen 😊

January 2, 2012

3:14 pm

FillKat

sn02py said:

FillKat said:

I agree with what you have said here. Also, I think she has already started to let him in, as she has started to show some of her emotions with him already.

I agree. We've seen it a few times this season (in her apartment in Rise, her freezing at the gun her jealousy in Eye of the Beholder), but we've also seen her pushing him away (Killshot). She's still fighting those tendencies she has to go it alone! I think she came to the realization that you can't love someone and have them love you back, and not let them be there for you. I don't think we would have seen the Kate of previous seasons say "Thank you for giving me the space that I needed to get through this" — because in doing so she was basically admitting that she was going through a time of weakness. I really think Killshot was huge in the Beckett/Castle relationship (funny, since we didn't see a ton of them together), because you can just see Kate in that last scene (pre-therapist) thinking "Ah crap...he really does love me and I'm hurting him...I need to work on me."

I think part of what has held her back, from men in general and especially from Castle, is that up until now, her whole life has been about the loss of her mother, in one way or another. When she said in the therapy session, after the scene you mentioned, that she wanted to be more than who she has been, but to do so in her mind, meant betraying her mother, said it all.

Opmerking [S40]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Castle has been there, taking all the crap she has thrown at him, but when he made his comment (same scene), I think what he was saying, in a roundabout way, is that he isn't going to wait forever, that she needs to get her **** together, and she was able to read between the lines. I agree with you, this helped her to realize she can no longer take his presence and tolerance of her behavior for granted.

Opmerking [S41]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

When he commented on missing his partner, and all the coffee he's brought her, he was saying 'I've given enough, you need to step up and give a little. I think every time he gave her a coffee, he was saying, 'I love you'. Just as in The Princess Bride, every time Westley, said "As you wish", he was saying, 'I love you'. This was Castle's way of doing the same. She finally realized what he was saying and had been doing all along.

Opmerking [S42]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 2, 2012

5:57 pm

PrettyFloralBonnet

sn02py said:

Good insights, everyone.

I think Beckett has had feelings for Castle for a very long time, and has been aware of them, at least since the Season 2 finale. In the Season 3 premiere, you see her missing Castle and protecting her heart when he tries to weasel himself in. I think in the end, she realizes that she likes having him around enough to bury her feelings.

I also think Kate fully accepted that she was in love with Castle in the LA episode. She knew what he wanted to say on that couch and when she walked away, she knew she hurt him. You can see in the way she looks at Castle on the plane as she's reading Royce's letter that there was no denial there, just acceptance. Not necessarily acceptance in a "I'm going to act on it now" kind of way, but I don't think she was in any way denying to herself those feelings.

What I think we're seeing this year (and even in Knockout) is a Kate who knows she's in love, but doesn't know how to be in love. She is so used to being strong and independent, and pushing people away when things get tough (ie. her mom's case, Montgomery's death, PTSD) that she hasn't yet accepted that part of being in love with someone is letting that person in, even when you're not at your best. Every time you see her begin to let herself get a bit emotional in front of Castle (which will happen if you're around someone you love), you also see her just as quickly trying to save face and pushing him away. I'm hoping for the rest of the season that, at very least, we'll see Kate begin to willingly let Castle in, confide in him more, and not push him away when things get tough (of course, I hope for more than that, but at very least, this is what I'd like to see). I'm optimistic about this because we know that Kate knows that she keeps one foot out the door in her relationships, and that, as per Killshot, she's ready to "be more" than that person. She just has to learn how!

I don't think, at this point, either Castle or Beckett are in denial of their love for each other, to themselves, or really to each other. They just aren't acting on them at the moment...

You know, I really agree about her guarding her heart in the first episode of Season 3, and Rick mirrors that in "Rise" when she finally, finally reappears in his life at the book signing. He was pretty subtle, but he stood up for himself (loved the set of his jaw, tone of voice and steely eyes), told her flat out he was angry with her and didn't immediately "take her back" the way he would have in the past. I think that was a big thing for him—he was letting her know he wasn't willing to be the whipping boy. He wasn't petty about it, but he drew a line, and Kate, bless her, responded to his expectation that she needed to afford him and their relationship some respect. She could have just walked away from him—pretty ballsy on his part, because he could have lost her right there. The fact that she didn't walk away actually made me pretty excited for this season.

Opmerking [S43]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S44]: Waardering

~~"The joy comes in the journey." — Rick Castle — 3x06~~

January 3, 2012

10:32 am

tyler

AimedForHisHead said:

~~And boy will i scream like a fangirl when i see that on the screen (and i'm a 36 year old guy!)~~

~~I don't mean to be mean but lol. Okay now that i've gotten that out of my system. sorry.~~

I've been reading the discussions posted by all and i believe we can argue the point on whether or not Beckett has accepted that she is in love with Castle both ways. Since it has not been reveal either way. We don't know for sure she has fully accepted that she is indeed in love with Castle. Hopefully, we will get more insight with the next few episode. I love Castle but it does moves a bit too slowly sometime.

Opmerking [S45]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

~~The only thing that i'd have to respectfully disagree from all the points posted earlier is with the 'Beckett fell in love with Castle when his books got her through her mother's death' part. I'd say for me that's more of admiration or crush rather than true love. Just like me falling for Ben Affleck when he was saving the city from the Fisk. Certainly, when they first met there was fireworks, but in love at that point i don't know. That would make Beckett seem a bit strange to me.~~

Opmerking [S46]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 3, 2012

11:29 am

sn02py

tyler said:

~~The only thing that i'd have to respectfully disagree from all the points posted earlier is with the 'Beckett fell in love with Castle when his books got her through her mother's death' part. I'd say for me that's more of admiration or crush rather than true love. Just like me falling for Ben Affleck when he was saving the city from the Fisk. Certainly, when they first met there was fireworks, but in love at that point i don't know. That would make Beckett seem a bit strange to me.~~

I agree with you on that one! I guess I'm just not a love at first sight kind of person. I think love develops over time, once you get to know someone.

Opmerking [S47]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

There is a scene near the end of season 1, I believe in Little Girl Lost, where Kate tells Will that she finds Castle "interesting." I think that's what it was for both of them. For Kate, Castle wrote these books that she loved. He had this total child/playboy image, but I think she saw that there was more to him fairly early on. He was smart about her cases and he was able to get under her skin in a way I imagine few people are able to. For Castle, I think he was intrigued by Kate's strength as a cop and as a person (ie. her reaction when he told her "story"). Castle is attracted to strong, beautiful women....and when Kate whispered "You have no idea!" in his ear, you could see him thinking "wow...I need more of this woman..." I don't think either were in love.

Opmerking [S48]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van de karakters

I've tried to pinpoint the episode where they really fell in love with each other and have come to the conclusion that there isn't one. As I said, love develops over time. I really don't think they were truly in love until sometime in season 3. In Season 1, there was a mutual attraction and that "I like you, but I don't want to like you" relationship. In Season 2, I think they became friends...and maybe a little more around the time of Suckerpunch. But at that point, I think they started caring for each other more deeply, but I still don't know that it was love (other than in the friend way). In Season 3, you can see them falling in love with each other.

Opmerking [S49]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 4, 2012

2:40 am

AimedForHisHead

~~I think the realization came with Demming at the end of season 2.~~

~~Castle feels it first when Kate is suddenly with Demming, you can see it in his face how utterly crushed he is when she's flirting with Demming (and when it becomes official) and he's taking the easy way out by hooking up with his ex-wife and all but cutting the ties to her for months which in fact is running away from the pain and disappointment.~~

~~For Kate it has to be her scene with Esposito where he brings it to the open by saying what everybody thinks.. that Castle has done way more research than needed and that he won't stay around to watch her be with another man. It has to be the final nail for her to realize that there is far more than friendship and it has led to her dumping Demming. The suckerpunch though is that she gets up her strength and tries to "come out" to him when he reveals Gina to be his partner (coincidentally leading to Josh while Castle was still unavailable).~~

January 4, 2012

11:54 am

Leftfield

grapes said:

Does it matter if she loves Castle or not if she doesn't show it to him?

~~Sure it does. Isn't it her feelings (in part) that are motivating and dictating her actions and her attitude? What she says or doesn't say, what she does or doesn't do, the reasons why she's in therapy etc...etc.....~~

January 4, 2012

1:18 pm

grapes

Leftfield said:

~~Sure it does. Isn't it her feelings (in part) that are motivating and dictating her actions and her attitude?~~

~~And what does her actions say if members of this forum are wondering if she really loves him or not?~~

January 4, 2012

1:39 pm

FillKat

grapes said:

~~And what does her actions say if members of this forum are wondering if she really loves him or not?~~

grapes said:

~~Does it matter if she loves Castle or not if she doesn't show it to him?~~

~~grapes, why the sinicism?~~

I think most people here have an opinion about what they think is going on with Kate and how she feels about Castle. I think the point of tyler starting this thread, was because there was a question about what others think about this issue, what Kate's actions/words, or lack thereof, say about her feelings toward Castle. And yes it does matter if she does loves him, but is unable or afraid to share her feelings. What's behind it? Why?

Obviously, this is all speculation on our parts as AM is the only one who really knows, but isn't that the point of this forum, to share our speculations on this show, the storyline, and character development?

January 4, 2012

1:47 pm

Leftfield

grapes said:

Leftfield said:

Opmerking [S50]: Respondent geeft aan dat ze denkt dat ze allemaal geen begrip hebben van de gevoelens van KB
Conflict gevoelens karkater/kijker

Opmerking [S51]: Is leuk iemand die juist niet heel intiem lijkt te zijn met KB wordt door de andere cynisch genoemd.
Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

Opmerking [S52]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S53]: Wijzen op realiteit

Sure it does. Isn't it her feelings (in part) that are motivating and dictating her actions and her attitude?

-

And what does her actions say if members of this forum are wondering if she really loves him or not?

I'm not one of those members that are in doubt. I think that Beckett loves Castle. I look at the expression on her face when she looks at him and I see it. Do I know "proof positive"? No, but I'm very comfortable with my belief. And, I understand that her feelings for Castle don't have to come out or be expressed to him to exist or to matter. I also think that it's not necessary for all her actions to be "positive" to work within the framework of her feelings for him. Her actions tell me that she loves him, they tell me that she's afraid, that she knows what she wants but doesn't know if she will ever be able to have it or if she will be able to keep it. They also tell me that she is trying her hardest to get to where she wants to be for herself and for him. A few examples of "actions" to think about,

Opmerking [S54]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Would Beckett be in therapy if not (again, in part) because of her feelings for Castle?

Would Castle still be at the precinct if Beckett had not sought him out in Rise and made clear that she wanted him back (again, in part) because of her feelings for him?

Would Beckett have reacted to Serena Kaye the way she did (again, in part) if not for her feelings for Castle?

Would Beckett be so welcoming to Castle's drop bys at her apartment if not (again, in part) due to her feelings for him?

Would Beckett's response to Castle's "help" during Kill Shot (her thank you and subsequent decision to move on with her therapy) have happened if not (again, in part) for her feelings for him?

Would her response and enjoyment to his humor, his quips, his teasing, the banter, be what we see (again, in part) if not for her feelings?

You may not like her actions or not agree with what she is doing or not doing but, IMO, to ask if her feelings (regardless of what you think they are, or are not) don't matter if Castle doesn't know is to ask if she matters. She's a person just like he is. Your question, whether you meant it this way or not, implies to me that her feelings only have worth if they are validated by another person. I don't think her feelings have to be "shown" to someone to matter (or be meaningful). I bet they matter to her.

For me, she has feelings and they matter, just as his do, regardless of who knows what.

Opmerking [S55]: Intimiteit

Opmerking [S56]: Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

Opmerking [S57]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

January 4, 2012

2:39 pm

sonnenschein77



grapes said:

Leftfield said:

Sure it does. Isn't it her feelings (in part) that are motivating and dictating her actions and her attitude?

And what does her actions say if members of this forum are wondering if she really loves him or not?

For me, it only means, that some people understand the KB character better than others. It is like in the real world- some people you can relate to, to some not... No big deal. We are all different.

Me, personally, I believe that she really loves him and I do understand her behaviour, even if I don't always like it or if I would approach some things differently...

There is no curse!

Avatar by SKB

January 4, 2012

3:02 pm

waldkind

by the way I've always wondered why Kate fell so "easily" for Demming until I checked my episode guide today and saw that "The late shaft" with Ellie Monroe was the episode right before the one where Demming showed up. Yuck! That's one of the few episodes I've only seen once and always skip...

January 4, 2012

5:52 pm

clogue33

FillKat said:

She is insanely in love with him. She has been since before they ever met.

Her feelings for Castle started with his books and how they pulled her from the difficulties of dealing with her mothers murder. Her annoyance with him in the beginning, IMO, was all about how he turned out to not quite be the guy she had imagined he was, from his books....yet, there was a strong attraction. Why on earth would she continue to put up with him, if not? Yes she did try on a couple occasions to get him booted, but that was out of frustration, not a real desire to have him gone and out of her life. The level of emotion and respect she feels for him, is what scares her. She's run from it as hard and as fast as she can, but she realizes it isn't going away, nor is he. He has gone out of his way to prove himself to her, to prove he is someone she can count on and trust. He has never abandoned her, no matter what she has thrown at him. His character and charm have slowly worn her down and she can no longer deny what she has felt for him all along.

Those are my 2 cents on the issue 😊

I don't disagree that she is in love with him, but only as much as you can be without completing the relationship circle. The fear and insecurity that comes with finally committing to someone can be

Opmerking [S58]: !! Respondent geeft aan dat zij de gevoelens van KB begrijpt omdat ze zich beter kan inleven en dat niet iedereen dat heeft.
Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

Opmerking [S59]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens en gedrag van een personage

overwhelming and so far they've only existed in that safe world that excludes intimacy, sex, life routines and family. Granted, 3 years of daily grind together (no pun intended) has removed much of the hesitancy and fear that goes with taking such a huge step but it still qualifies her love for him, to me.

All of that being said, it is a pure joy to watch her come to that conclusion. Every episode shows how big the void was in her life before him and the little steps she takes each week to become a whole person again.

Opmerking [S60]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 4, 2012

8:34 pm

grapes

FillKat said:

grapes said:

And what does her actions say if members of this forum are wondering if she really loves him or not?

grapes said:

Does it matter if she loves Castle or not if she doesn't show it to him?

grapes, why the sinicism?

I think most people here have an opinion about what they think is going on with Kate and how she feels about Castle. I think the point of Tyler starting this thread, was because there was a question about what others think about this issue, what Kate's actions/words, or lack thereof, say about her feelings toward Castle. And yes it does matter if she does loves him, but is unable or afraid to share her feelings. What's behind it? Why?

Obviously, this is all speculation on our parts as AM is the only one who really knows, but isn't that the point of this forum, to share our speculations on this show, the storyline, and character development?

Don't worry I'm a huge shipper.

But when it comes to Kate she's quite subtle about her relationship with Castle. The points Leftfield noted make a bit more clear but still you can interpret them as if she thinks he is her best friend.

When Castle ask her about Serena she lies about not caring if they start dating. She could have told him that it wouldn't be a good idea. A petty excuse would suffice.

Tell Castle he's helpful with solving cases instead of telling just Gates.

Or bring him coffee for once.

Ask him about his latest book if it's coming along.

Stuff like that.

Opmerking [S61]: Advies geven aan de karakters

January 4, 2012

9:37 pm

FillKat

grapes said:

When Castle ask her about Serena she lies about not caring if they start dating. She could have told him that it wouldn't be a good idea. A petty excuse would suffice.
Tell Castle he's helpful with solving cases instead of telling just Gates.
Or bring him coffee for once.
Ask him about his latest book if it's coming along.

With respect to your list, I think when Serena came along, she was not ready to make her move with Castle, and to keep him from being with someone that he possibly liked and she knew Serena was interested in him, would have been selfish. As the old saying goes, if you truly love someone, you will set them free.....etc, etc. I think Castle's happiness is important to her. On the flip side, and somewhat contrary, was the possibility that IF Castle did take up with Serena, that took the pressure off herself, and while it may have been painful to see him with someone else again, at least she was not putting herself in a situation she was not ready for. The third possibility, was that she was testing Castle, to see if he had truly changed, or if he was still chasing after every skirt that gave him and ounce of attention, or that he was attracted too. OR, it could have been a little bit of all of those reasons, instead of why she did not respond in a more jealous or territorial fashion. While it would have been fun to watch her squirm a bit, I think it would have been too soon, and out of character for her to have put any outward claims on him. When Kate told Serena how Castle never had any doubts about her innocence, and what kind of guy he is, says it all. To me that says, she loves him and will support him, no matter what.

Bringing him coffee, giving him complements, or any inquiry into his personal life, would be admitting interest or caring for him, which would also be contrary to how she has been with him all along. It's only been in the last couple episodes that she has started to do this, as she is gradually getting herself to the point of feeling like she can commit to him. To say or do anything to give him hope or to give him the impression she was interested in him, at that time, would have jeopardized her safety net, would have compromised the wall she has/had around her.

For me, nothing she has ever said or done, tells me he is just a friend, to her. In fact, everything she has done or said, has told me just the opposite, regardless of how she has expressed herself outwardly.

Opmerking [S62]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S63]: Intimiteit

January 5, 2012

5:33 am

nike75

Why is it that we question Kate's feelings for Rick but not his feelings for her?

IMO, because beside Rick's actions in the last three episodes we also heard him talk about his feelings with Martha and Alexis. If we would not have gotten that, there is also the possibility to interpret it as him caring for her as his best friend.

It's only in this season that we get some insight into Kate's feelings when she talks about it in the therapy sessions. And nothing she talked about there, indicates that she just cares about him as a friend. In fact, IMO, all she does and says this season screams that she is in love with Rick (and is aware of it) and wants to give them a real chance (instead of having one foot out of the door like she did with Josh). And I disagree with the opinion that she doesn't show him that she loves him, especially this season. I can't think of one single episode where there wasn't a scene in which she showed him how important he is to her and that she thinks of him as someone more than a friend. But IMO, right now he is at the same point Kate was in season 3 — she hurt him very much over the summer and now he doesn't trust what she is showing him and to get him believe in them (again) she will have to speak the words and convince him.

"We speak for the dead. That's the job. We're all they've got when the wicked robbed them of their voices. We owe that to them. But we don't owe them our lives."

3x24 — "Knockout" — RIP Captain Montgomery

Avatar made by SBK — Thanks!

January 5, 2012

9:45 am

tyler

nike75 said:

Why is it that we question Kate's feelings for Rick but not his feelings for her?

IMO, because beside Rick's actions in the last three episodes we also heard him talk about his feelings with Martha and Alexis. If we would not have gotten that, there is also the possibility to interpret it as him caring for her as his best friend.

It's only in this season that we get some insight into Kate's feelings when she talks about it in the therapy sessions. And nothing she talked about there, indicates that she just cares about him as a friend. In fact, IMO, all she does and says this season screams that she is in love with Rick (and is aware of it) and wants to give them a real chance (instead of having one foot out of the door like she did with Josh). And I disagree with the opinion that she doesn't show him that she loves him, especially this season. I can't think of one single episode where there wasn't a scene in which she showed him how important he is to her and that she thinks of him as someone more than a friend. But IMO, right now he is at the same point Kate was in season 3 — she hurt him very much over the summer and now he doesn't trust what she is showing him and to get him believe in them (again) she will have to speak the words and convince him.

The reason Castle's feelings towards Beckett is not being questioned is because he has verbalize them. It's further shown when he came to see her in the hospital armed with flowers. He was certainly ready to see things through and be honest to her about it. Beckett on the other hand, at that point up until now is not yet ready to voice the same words to anyone.

The discussion we are having here is on her not readiness to voice the same words to Castle. We questioned her love for Castle because the words used by AM in his interviews for Beckett's feeling towards Castle was describe as 'strong feelings' and not love. Not to say that she doesn't love the guy

Opmerking [S64]: Fandom

because everyone who watches the show knows that she does. I am just asking whether Beckett the character has accepted that she loves the guy. Because when you talk about having a wall around your heart, it's being afraid to love someone. I see it as her saying, 'hey, if i love someone completely like i did my mum. what if i loose them?' thus the reason for the wall to exist.

Opmerking [S65]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

January 5, 2012

11:19 am

nike75

tyler said:

I am just asking whether Beckett the character has accepted that she loves the guy. Because when you talk about having a wall around your heart, it's being afraid to love someone. I see it as her saying, 'hey, if i love someone completely like i did my mum. what if i loose them?' thus the reason for the wall to exist.

I think she has accepted that she loves Castle. But loving someone doesn't change behaviour and/or relationship pattern you've developed over the last 10-12 years. So loving him and accepting his love for her makes her want to change, not necessarily for him, but more for herself because she doesn't want the relationship with Castle go the same way her relationship with Josh went where she always had one foot out of the door. I agree that the "wall" is this place in her which is afraid to love too deeply, too feel too much, to let herself dive in completely because if this other person goes away what happens to her. But for me the important thing is that she works on this fear, she wants to be able to go "all in" with Castle even if she can't tell him right now.

Opmerking [S66]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

After "Cuffed" I needed a break from Castle because I really had some problems with this episode, so I watched all episodes of "Battlestar Galactica" in the last 3 weeks. After this experience I'm really glad that AWM & Co deal with the relationship issues in a much more mature way. I'm so incredible grateful that they let Kate confront her issues instead of running away again. Maybe it's really baby steps at a snail's pace but at least it's baby steps in the right direction instead of running away and marrying the next guy because you are afraid of being happy.

Opmerking [S67]: Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

"We speak for the dead. That's the job. We're all they've got when the wicked robbed them of their voices. We owe that to them. But we don't owe them our lives."

3x24 - "Knockout" - RIP Captain Montgomery

January 5, 2012

11:45 am

He-Touches-Things

nike75 said:

Why is it that we question Kate's feelings for Rick but not his feelings for her?

IMO, because beside Rick's actions in the last three episodes we also heard him talk about his feelings with Martha and Alexis. If we would not have gotten that, there is also the possibility to interpret it as him caring for her as his best friend.

It's only in this season that we get some insight into Kate's feelings when she talks about it in the therapy sessions. And nothing she talked about there, indicates that she just cares about him as a friend. In fact, IMO, all she does and says this season screams that she is in love with Rick (and is aware of it) and wants to give them a real chance (instead of having one foot out of the door like she did with Josh). And I disagree with the opinion that she doesn't show him that she loves him, especially this season. I can't think of one single episode where there wasn't a scene in which she showed him how important he is to her and that she thinks of him as someone more than a friend. But IMO, right now he is at the same point Kate was in season 3 — she hurt him very much over the summer and now he doesn't trust what she is showing him and to get him believe in them (again) she will have to speak the words and convince him.

Don't forget that in Eye of the Beholder that she was raging to Dr. Worf about Rick's behavior toward Serena, but still stopped short of admitting her feelings. It was so obvious, but she still couldn't verbalize it, even in the privacy of her therapy session.

January 5, 2012

1:17 pm

grapes

At the end of Killshot Kate and Castle have their little talk.

What struck me was that when Castle gives her another heartwarming 'Always' the look on her face.

She doesn't smile but more like stares in the void knowing that she still isn't there yet.

On an emotional level she isn't ready for any intimate relationship.....yet.

Opmerking [S68]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 5, 2012

9:21 pm

sn02py

grapes said:-

At the end of Killshot Kate and Castle have their little talk.

What struck me was that when Castle gives her another heartwarming 'Always' the look on her face.

She doesn't smile but more like stares in the void knowing that she still isn't there yet.

On an emotional level she isn't ready for any intimate relationship.....yet.

Opmerking [S69]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I didn't see it like that at all. I saw it more, as I said in a previous post, as her realizing that she has this really great guy who has been there for her through thick and thin for three years, and that pushing him away and hiding her feelings was hurting him. Castle doesn't get upset/morose very often, so I think his mood during that conversation made an impression on her. Yet, despite the fact that he was upset, he still vowed to be there for her "always." I think it was this conversation that made her go see the therapist, moreso than the PTSD. If it were just the PTSD, I don't think she would have brought up her mom. IMO, anyway.

Opmerking [S70]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 6, 2012

8:34 am

tyler

Ok this is just my opinion, but from what everyone's else said in the earlier post to the more recent ones. I now think that, until Beckett is able to say the words out loud i don't think that she has accepted that she is already in love with Castle.

She doesn't have to say it yet to Castle if she is not ready just maybe to someone else like Dr Worf, her dad, his mum, Lanie or even maybe her pet Harley Softail. I think her saying it out loud would be her complete acceptance that she is head over heels in love with Castle.

Opmerking [S71]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 6, 2012

12:52 pm

FillKat

tyler said:

~~.....I now think that, until Beckett is able to say the words out loud i don't think that she has accepted that she is already in love with Castle.~~

~~.....I think her saying it out loud would be her complete acceptance that she is head over heels in love with Castle.—~~

Sorry tyler, but I don't agree. I think she knows very well what she feels and she has come accepted it. The problem is, IMO, she has known (or suspected) for a long time what Castle feels toward her, and his ILY confirmed it.

Her not saying anything to him about her feelings, is her way of controlling what happens between them, until she is in a better place to meet Castle on level ground. To come to him, in a position that allows her to be honest and open to being the best partner/lover/girlfriend she can be.

Until she feels she is in the place she needs to be, she won't share her feelings, as she knows the minute she does, its game over and the relationship starts. As the 'one and done' girl, this is it for her, and she cannot come into it unprepared or broken. She needs to come into it, at her best, giving their relationship the best chance to last – 'until death do them part'

Opmerking [S72]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 6, 2012

1:14 pm

He-Touches-Things

FillKat said:

tyler said:

~~.....I now think that, until Beckett is able to say the words out loud i don't think that she has accepted that she is already in love with Castle.~~

~~.....I think her saying it out loud would be her complete acceptance that she is head over heels in love with Castle.—~~

~~Sorry tyler, but I don't agree. I think she knows very well what she feels and she has come accepted it. The problem is, IMO, she has known (or suspected) for a long time what Castle feels toward her, and his ILY confirmed it.~~

~~Her not saying anything to him about her feelings, is her way of controlling what happens between them,~~

~~until she is in a better place to meet Castle on level ground. To come to him, in a position that allows her to be honest and open to being the best partner/lover/girlfriend she can be.~~

~~Until she feels she is in the place she needs to be, she won't share her feelings, as she knows the minute she does, its game over and the relationship starts. As the 'one and done' girl, this is it for her, and she cannot come into it unprepared or broken. She needs to come into it, at her best, giving their relationship the best chance to last — 'until death do them part'~~

~~This isn't just about her controlling things between the two of them. It's her inability to confess her feelings to Anyone. She has not been able to give voice to what is as plain as the nose on her face (and what a lovely nose that is[Image Can Not Be Found]) — not even to Dr. Worf in the safety and privacy of his office.~~

~~tyler said:~~

~~She doesn't have to say it yet to Castle if she is not ready just maybe to someone else like Dr Worf, her dad, his mum, Lanie or even maybe her pet Harley Softail. I think her saying it out loud would be her complete acceptance that she is head over heels in love with Castle.~~

~~This is what I was trying to say earlier.~~

~~January 6, 2012~~

~~2:29 pm~~

~~FillKat~~

~~He Touches Things said:~~

~~This isn't just about her controlling things between the two of them. It's her inability to confess her feelings to Anyone. She has not been able to give voice to what is as plain as the nose on her face~~

~~(and what a lovely nose that is _____) — not even to Dr. Worf in the safety and privacy of his office.~~

~~tyler said:~~

~~She doesn't have to say it yet to Castle if she is not ready just maybe to someone else like Dr Worf, her dad, his mum, Lanie or even maybe her pet Harley Softail. I think her saying it out loud would be her complete acceptance that she is head over heels in love with Castle.~~

~~This is what I was trying to say earlier.~~

Opmerking [S73]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I agree she should be able to talk to someone about it, most of all her therapist. Setting aside your thoughts on the issue, could it not also be because the minute she says it out loud, her ability to maintain control over the situation, until she feels she is ready, is compromised?

She is a control freak, and she isn't that way just in certain situations, she is that way in all aspects of her life. It is her way of keeping her life compartmentalized. She compartmentalizes her feelings about a given situation, or person, as well. This way she can maintain control over her emotions, and be who she needs to be in a given situation, and when she is at home by herself, as we have seen on a few occasions, is the only time she lets go.

No one can live this way for any length of time without the seems bursting at some point.

Opmerking [S74]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

...and yes, she has a perfect nose, a perfect mouth, perfect lips, etc.,etc.,etc! sheesh! There should be a law about someone looking so perfect.

Everyone has something about them, that distracts the eye of the person looking at them, such as Nathan's crooked nose. 😊 Stana's eyes are beautiful and I can't help but be distracted by looking at her directly in the eyes. You can't help yourself. They draw you in, and you can't look away.

This makes for a great interrogator!

Opmerking [S75]: Fandom

January 6, 2012

3:27 pm

sonnenschein77

FillKat said:

~~I agree she should be able to talk to someone about it, most of all her therapist. Setting aside your thoughts on the issue, could it not also be because the minute she says it out loud, her ability to maintain control over the situation, until she feels she is ready, is compromised?~~

~~She is a control freak, and she isn't that way just in certain situations, she is that way in all aspects of her life. It is her way of keeping her life compartmentalized. She compartmentalizes her feelings about a given situation, or person, as well. This way she can maintain control over her emotions, and be who she needs to be in a given situation, and when she is at home by herself, as we have seen on a few occasions, is the only time she lets go.~~

~~No one can live this way for any length of time without the seems bursting at some point.~~

~~...and yes, she has a perfect nose, a perfect mouth, perfect lips, etc.,etc.,etc! sheesh! There should be a law about someone looking so perfect.~~

~~Everyone has something about them, that distracts the eye of the person looking at them, such as Nathan's crooked nose. 😊 Stana's eyes are beautiful and I can't help but be distracted by looking at her directly in the eyes. You can't help yourself. They draw you in, and you can't look away.~~

~~This makes for a great interrogator!~~

I think, you're right about this one. She is a control freak. And admitting your feelings for someone, saying it out loud, is giving up control, at least to a certain extent. So, no way you do it until you have the feeling, you're ready for it, whether you think you can control the situation anyhow or you have learned to give up control at least a little bit...

That's the good thing about the control freak issue- you can get rid of it. It's really not easy and it doesn't work out overnight, but it's possible. And she has her therapist to work on it.

As for the 2nd part of the post, I agree as well. She's absolutely beautiful.

January 6, 2012

5:03 pm

lulu12345

Actually if u think about it even castle could not admit his feelings for kate to martha in knockout. He was struggling a lot there. But later on when he thought she was dying, he admitted to her.

Should we also think that kate would admit her feelings to castle in a similar way? That is when he is shot and dying? I hope it does not come to that!!!

January 6, 2012

5:11 pm

clogue33

After watching Sneak Peek #4, I'm changing my answer. Without qualification, Kate is and always has been in love with Castle. On top of that, I think she now consciously knows, accepts it, and LOVES it.

January 7, 2012

6:16 pm

1-and-done

nike75 said:

Why is it that we question Kate's feelings for Rick but not his feelings for her?

IMO, because beside Rick's actions in the last three episodes we also heard him talk about his feelings with Martha and Alexis. If we would not have gotten that, there is also the possibility to interpret it as him caring for her as his best friend.

It's only in this season that we get some insight into Kate's feelings when she talks about it in the therapy sessions. And nothing she talked about there, indicates that she just cares about him as a friend. In fact, IMO, all she does and says this season screams that she is in love with Rick (and is aware of it) and wants to give them a real chance (instead of having one foot out of the door like she did with Josh). And I disagree with the opinion that she doesn't show him that she loves him, especially this season. I can't think of one single episode where there wasn't a scene in which she showed him how important he is to her and that she thinks of him as someone more than a friend. But IMO, right now he is at the same point Kate was in season 3 — she hurt him very much over the

Opmerking [S76]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S77]: Fantasie

Opmerking [S78]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

~~summer and now he doesn't trust what she is showing him and to get him believe in them (again) she will have to speak the words and convince him.~~

~~Oh, nice to have you back, Nike75. Missed you the last few days.~~

Yeah, we see Kate only in this season addressing her innermost feelings. In former seasons they were there, too, but not shown this openly. Mostly we had seen her feelings as facial expressions then. And if you're not that good doing face interpretations then you missed her developing feelings for Castle very easily.

But I had difficulties myself to interpret his feelings for her in the last seasons,... maybe up until Last Call he didn't really show them openly. And you're so right... Rick is now at the same point Kate was in season 3. He needs to get a proof of what Kate is only indicating right now. And I think she knows that. But maybe she's just helpless how to do it or how to manage that in connection with her letting her secret out.

Whatttt?

January 8, 2012

2:29 pm

RickNotCastle

Great post. I think you really nailed Beckett's point of view. Right now she can pretend that all the time they spend together is friend/partner, but as soon as she acknowledges her real feelings it is all over. They will be together and she is not ready for THAT, which means she is not ready to say it our loud.

FillKat said:

He Touches Things said:

This isn't just about her controlling things between the two of them. It's her inability to confess her feelings to Anyone. She has not been able to give voice to what is as plain as the nose on her face

(and what a lovely nose that is _____) — not even to Dr. Worf in the safety and privacy of his office.

tyler said:

She doesn't have to say it yet to Castle if she is not ready just maybe to someone else like Dr Worf, her dad, his mum, Lanie or even maybe her pet Harley Softail. I think her saying it out loud would be her complete acceptance that she is head over heels in love with Castle.

This is what I was trying to say earlier.

I agree she should be able to talk to someone about it, most of all her therapist. Setting aside your thoughts on the issue, could it not also be because the minute she says it out loud, her ability to maintain control over the situation, until she feels she is ready, is compromised?

Opmerking [S79]: Opvallend: begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter ligt volgens deze respondent aan het lezen van gezichtsuitdrukkingen

Opmerking [S80]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S81]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

She is a control freak, and she isn't that way just in certain situations, she is that way in all aspects of her life. It is her way of keeping her life compartmentalized. She compartmentalizes her feelings about a given situation, or person, as well. This way she can maintain control over her emotions, and be who she needs to be in a given situation, and when she is at home by herself, as we have seen on a few occasions, is the only time she lets go.

No one can live this way for any length of time without she seems bursting at some point.

January 8, 2012

3:41 pm

tyler

Ok than i have to agree to disagree with some of you guys, since I still believe than to be able to verbalize or voice her feeling is the final step in self acceptance (tell her cat if need be just say it Becks, you'll feel better) of her feeling for Castle. Reasoning for not voicing may vary for one audience point of view to another. It could be a pile of reasons since in this department, lets admit it Beckett is a mess.

to avoid someone having to reread stuff from the 1st page all the way to here to understand what the discussion is about...notes.

Our discussion centers upon whether Beckett realize she is in love with Castle or she is not ready to tag it as love (acceptance) and have feels strong feelings towards him. I chose 'strong feelings' to describe it because those are the words that was use by AM in his interview about the subject.

So people post on, whether Beckett has accepted or not accepted her feelings for Castle. And some argument on why we believe it to be true. Please note that, our reasoning are our personal belief. The true state of her acceptance have not been reveal. (and yeah.. everyone here knows that Beckett's already in love with Castle no doubt about that but does the Becks the character know it ?)

January 8, 2012

3:45 pm

nike75

@tyler

Can I ask you a question then?

When do you believe Castle accepted his love for Beckett?

"We speak for the dead. That's the job. We're all they've got when the wicked robbed them of their voices. We owe that to them. But we don't owe them our lives."

3x24 - "Knockout" - RIP Captain Montgomery

Avatar made by SBK - Thanks!

January 8, 2012

3:47 pm

Opmerking [S82]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S83]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S84]: Heel belangrijk!! Iedereen heeft door zijn eigen vorm van PSI een andere mening over de gevoelens van KB Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

1-and-done

tyler said:

Ok than i have to agree to disagree with some of you guys, since I still believe than to be able to verbalize or voice her feeling is the final step in self acceptance (tell her cat if need be just say it Becks, you'll feel better) of her feeling for Castle. Reasoning for not voicing may vary for one audience point of view to another. It could be a pile of reasons since in this department, lets admit it Beckett is a mess.

to avoid someone having to reread stuff from the 1st page all the way to here to understand what the discussion is about...notes.

Our discussion centers upon whether Beckett realize she is in love with Castle or she is not ready to tag it as love (acceptance) and have feels strong feelings towards him. I chose 'strong feelings' to describe it because those are the words that was use by AM in his interview about the subject.

So people post on, whether Beckett has accepted or not accepted her feelings for Castle. And some argument on why we believe it to be true. Please note that, our reasoning are our personal belief. The true state of her acceptance have not been reveal. (and yeah.. everyone here knows that Beckett's already in love with Castle no doubt about that but does the Becks the character know it ?)

Why is it that you're still circling around this question??

The answer to that is so simple:

Andrew Marlow did say it's a love story.

How come you question that?

Whatttt?

January 8, 2012

4:01 pm

sonnenschein77

tyler said:

Ok than i have to agree to disagree with some of you guys, since I still believe than to be able to verbalize or voice her feeling is the final step in self acceptance (tell her cat if need be just say it Becks, you'll feel better) of her feeling for Castle. Reasoning for not voicing may vary for one audience point of view to another. It could be a pile of reasons since in this department, lets admit it Beckett is a mess.

...

IMO there is a difference between accepting something and acting it out..., acting it out (in this case saying it out loud) is even a step further than accepting.

Opmerking [S85]: Respondenten praten met elkaar op verschillende dimensies. Deze respondent gaat uit van Andrew Marlowe de maker van de serie, De respondent hierboven gaat uit van de gevoelens van KB Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I think (and I know for me), that I can accept something respectively admit something to myself and might still need a little more time to live up to it.

Opmerking [S86]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

~~So, we agree to disagree.~~

~~There is no curse!~~

~~Avatar by SKB~~

~~January 14, 2012~~

~~10:28 am~~

~~SteveL~~

Clearly a 'yes' for me...of course she loves him.

But, she is a control freak, and giving in to that emotion risks losing that control. She can keep Castle at arm's length at work while it's mostly professional, but if she drops that barrier she loses all chance of separating her personal life and her work life.

If she did come out and say it, how could they work together? Would she really let Rick attend some of the high-risk scenes they've been too if she acknowledged to herself how she felt? She'd do everything she could to protect him.

Opmerking [S87]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

(coincidentally my g/f is a police detective, and she's much like Beckett...she shows her emotions rather than verbally expressing them, and even when she's being incredibly romantic she'd rather bite her tongue than say the L word)

Opmerking [S88]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

January 14, 2012

12:03 pm

tyler

Hi all,

Sorry for the late respond, I have been away on work assignment and let me tell you guys 1 thing that I've learn on this trip, eating TOFU with chopstick is not easy. Well if you hold the tofu to tight it either slips or gets squished. if not enough force you cannot successfully pick it up. Maybe i just have pudgy fingers.

Anyway on to the questions,

For me, i think Castle realize that how much he really really like Beckett after he saw her with Demming. But seeing that Beckett was happy with this guy so Castle being a gentleman did what a gentleman would do it such a scenario. But i see him realizing it was love when he broke up with Gina. When he told his mother that everything was fine but he and Gina was not in love. So.. for me when he says something like this i see it as him knowing that he was possibly in love with someone else. So I'd say Castle acceptance that he love Beckett was during poof. We later see throughout the

season him trying to say something to Beckett but was always foiled. finally the courage to actually say the words during the finale. He didn't have the same courage to say it during knockdown.

Opmerking [S89]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

But Beckett is a different story, i don't think it is a control issue, because if you have already accepted that you are in love with someone than refuses to admit it because she is a control freak makes Beckett seems a bit manipulative? I think i'll just respectfully disagree on this point. I do however think that Beckett is just afraid of losing someone she loves again. That is why admitting it is so hard, even if she knows she is already in love with the guy. When she says the word out loud and not necessarily to Castle mind you. It would be like surrender. That's why i think she hasn't accepted it yet. But well, just saw the 11th episode a few minutes ago, it seems like she really wants to be with Castle. Just small moments but hey they are getting there.

Opmerking [S90]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

~~***Anyway I believe Castle is just about perception. I set up the topic for fun because wanted to know what everyone else thought. And their justification on it (I have been drill with the mantra, "In God we trust, all other's bring data" at a very very impressionable age). I'm neither vain nor conceited enough to think my views are the correct ones. Also i hope i don't have to deal with people who thinks their's are the most correct views out there unless of course Andrew tells us in an article that this or that is what he was trying to say through the character in an interview. So that is why we are circling the topic in such a manner. Because if you guys tell me that Beckett has fully come to terms with her feelings with Castle than show me where? which scene? it's the mantra thing.--~~

January 14, 2012

2:23 pm

AimedForHisHead

I think Castle getting together with Gina is just the result of him seeing Kate with Demming.. he's crushed which is very evident in his expression so he kind of ran away and Gina was the next best thing, only it didn't work it and they broke up because of the same reasons their marriage failed (i assume) and when he realized it he ended it.

I don't think Kate regards saying I Love you (to anyone let alone Castle) is surrendering.. she has not done so because she feels she isn't quite there yet. The swing scene in Rise explains her reasons very well.. she realized that her mother's murder dominates her life and until she works through that no man will have a lasting chance with her, even Castle and that's what holds her back.

If it wasn't for that she would have kicked Josh to the curb (in a nice way of course) and sat down with Castle to talk about what he said after she was shot but because Castle is so important to her (i think she already knows deep down that he is the one and done) she holds him at arm's length for the time being until she's ready.

This is why she reacts jealous when Beckett v2 came into the picture with that sexy, intelligent art thief because that's the type Castle could go for and she fears that more than anything else (just look at her face when Castle pulled her leg talking about his +1 for Ryan's wedding.. there was fear in her eyes).

Opmerking [S91]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I think there'll be definitely a crisis of some sort concerning Castle (not so heavy as a bullet to his chest i believe) which forces her hand to come clean and what comes out of that and how it plays out

is anyone's guess.. personal theory is that it may happen during the big two parter later in the season which once again seems to be a huge threat much like the dirty bomb in season 3 (and Marlowe has already hinted that secrets were going to be spilled this season).

Opmerking [S92]: Voorspellen

January 22, 2012

4:01 pm

1-and-done

Hard Core Castle Groupie

tyler said:

Ok than i have to agree to disagree with some of you guys, since I still believe than to be able to verbalize or voice her feeling is the final step in self acceptance (tell her cat if need be just say it Becks, you'll feel better) of her feeling for Castle. Reasoning for not voicing may vary for one audience point of view to another. It could be a pile of reasons since in this department, lets admit it Beckett is a mess.

to avoid someone having to reread stuff from the 1st page all the way to here to understand what the discussion is about...notes-

Our discussion centers upon whether Beckett realize she is in love with Castle or she is not ready to tag it as love (acceptance) and have feels strong feelings towards him. I chose 'strong feelings' to describe it because those are the words that was use by AM in his interview about the subject.

So people post on, whether Beckett has accepted or not accepted her feelings for Castle. And some argument on why we believe it to be true. Please note that, our reasoning are our personal belief. The true state of her acceptance have not been reveal. (and yeah.. everyone here knows that Beckett's already in love with Castle no doubt about that but does the Becks the character know it ?)

-

So, do you now "believe" she's in love with him because now YOU can finally see it (regarding the hand sex promo of 4x13)?

To the first bolded sentence I'd like to ask you a question:

Do you really think there's only one way to transport a feeling to others? You should be more open minded than that, don't you think? Or what do you think "is" a kiss? It's a feeling you transport through action. But what if you transport the same feeling with all the other possibilities a human being is given to show how they feel? We have the advantage of language, sure, but are we supposed to use it everytime we interact with others? No, not in any case. We perhaps would like to choose the other ways sometimes as well. If you like your dog, your cat or your horse you would give them a tender stroke. It's useless to say "I like you" to your dog and not to touch them.

Have you already tried to express your feelings in any other way than to verbalize them? If you hug an old friend as you meet again after 3 years not seeing him, do you tell him before you would like to

give him a hug — ? That would be odd, don't you think? But you've been willing to give him a hug. So you accepted in silence that he is important enough to show him that you missed him, didn't you?

And to the second bolded sentence:

Of course, her feelings has been revealed, indeed. But not everyone was able to "listen"/to see! If you still don't see them, rewatch season 3 very carefully and pay attention to each(!) smile she gives him or each look of her in his direction. And if you'll see a significant change in her eyes, then you'd seen it!!

I may even say that she recognized her feelings for him as love long before he did. Yes, he did find her attractive. And yes, he was intrigued. Of course, he tried to act on this attraction. But recognizing his feelings as more than "I just like to get her done" and being interested not only in the gorgeous woman she definitely is but also in her as a person, as a character, that had taken him quite a while.

Opmerking [S93]: Niet iedereen kan zien hoe de karakters zich echt voelen maar deze respondent kan dat we;; Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S94]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Whatttt?

January 22, 2012

10:37 pm

tyler

~~1 and done said:~~

So, do you now "believe" she's in love with him because now YOU can finally see it (regarding the hand sex promo of 4x13)?

To the first bolded sentence I'd like to ask you a question:

Do you really think there's only one way to transport a feeling to others? You should be more open minded than that, don't you think? Or what do you think "is" a kiss? It's a feeling you transport through action. But what if you transport the same feeling with all the other possibilities a human being is given to show how they feel? We have the advantage of language, sure, but are we supposed to use it everytime we interact with others? No, not in any case. We perhaps would like to choose the other ways sometimes as well. If you like your dog, your cat or your horse you would give them a tender stroke. It's useless to say "I like you" to your dog and not to touch them.

Have you already tried to express your feelings in any other way than to verbalize them? If you hug an old friend as you meet again after 3 years not seeing him, do you tell him before you would like to

give him a hug — ? That would be odd, don't you think? But you've been willing to give him a hug. So you accepted in silence that he is important enough to show him that you missed him, didn't you?

And to the second bolded sentence:

Of course, her feelings has been revealed, indeed. But not everyone was able to "listen"/to see! If you still don't see them, rewatch season 3 very carefully and pay attention to each(!) smile she gives him or each look of her in his direction. And if you'll see a significant change in her eyes, then you'd seen it!!

I may even say that she recognized her feelings for him as love long before he did. Yes, he did find her attractive. And yes, he was intrigued. Of course, he tried to act on this attraction. But recognizing his feelings as more than "I just like to get her done" and being interested not only in the gorgeous woman she definitely is but also in her as a person, as a character, that had taken him quite a while.

~~/* sighs~~

~~against my better judgment I'll respond to this.~~

It's not about telling Castle. It's about admitting it to yourself that you are in fact in love. Has Beckett come to terms with being in love with Castle? Has she accepted that she is already in love with the guy? If she has why can't she say it. And that my friend is what Dr. Worf wanted her to admit. Bear in mind that you can have strong feelings toward someone, even be in a relationship with them and not be ready to label it as love. And we know that Beckett does love Castle. Why won't she say it? My personal opinion is that if she ever does say it, admit to her feelings for Castle, it means --> "the wall is down".

Opmerking [S95]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

Opmerking [S96]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S97]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S98]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

And i believe i have watch Castle as many times as any other Castle junkie out there. And having a different opinion on a subject does not mean I'm watching or listening to it any less than you have. I've watched it, I've analyze it and perceive it differently. That's all. You can have 3 sets of people analyzing a bunch of numbers and all 3 groups coming up with different conclusions on the same numbers. And the human emotion is way more complex. But hey, i do enjoy reading every other perspective there is out there.

Opmerking [S99]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

~~PS: Why does every tender moment that Beckett has with Castle needs to be associated with sex? Can it just be that, a tender moment.~~

January 22, 2012

11:39 pm

RickNotCastle

I just rewatched "Eye of the Beholder" and something that struck me is the smile on Rick's face when Serena does not ask him back to her hotel at the end of the episode. Serena and Kate have their little talk about what a good guy Rick is. Then Kate leaves Serena and Rick alone, and Serena gives him the "I don't steal things that belong to someone else." She gives him a kiss on the cheek and walks off, and he is smiling. I think Serena just gave him the kind of boost he needed to keep waiting for Kate. She confirmed that it was obvious to her that Rick was "claimed" by Kate. And he is happy about that

Opmerking [S100]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

The whole episode was about them being in a relationship without being in a relationship. But I think Castle's character was very happy to get affirmation from outside his immediate circle. Especially since his mother was encouraging him to play the field.

Opmerking [S101]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

~~AimedForHisHead said:~~

I think Castle getting together with Gina is just the result of him seeing Kate with Demming.. he's crushed which is very evident in his expression so he kind of ran away and Gina was the next best thing, only it didn't work it and they broke up because of the same reasons their marriage failed (i assume) and when he realized it he ended it.

I don't think Kate regards saying I Love you (to anyone let alone Castle) is surrendering.. she has not done so because she feels she isn't quite there yet. The swing scene in Rise explains her reasons very well.. she realized that her mother's murder dominates her life and until she works through that no man will have a lasting chance with her, even Castle and that's what holds her back.

Opmerking [S102]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

If it wasn't for that she would have kicked Josh to the curb (in a nice way of course) and sat down with Castle to talk about what he said after she was shot but because Castle is so important to her (i think she already knows deep down that he is the one and done) she holds him at arm's length for the time being until she's ready.

Opmerking [S103]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

This is why she reacts jealous when Beckett v2 came into the picture with that sexy, intelligent art thief because that's the type Castle could go for and she fears that more than anything else (just look at her face when Castle pulled her leg talking about his +1 for Ryan's wedding.. there was fear in her eyes).

Opmerking [S104]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I think there'll be definitely a crisis of some sort concerning Castle (not so heavy as a bullet to his chest i believe) which forces her hand to come clean and what comes out of that and how it plays out is anyone's guess.. personal theory is that it may happen during the big two parter later in the season which once again seems to be a huge threat much like the dirty bomb in season 3 (and Marlowe has already hinted that secrets were going to be spillt this season).

Opmerking [S105]: Voorspelling

January 22, 2012

11:45 pm

beckettrocks

I think she's madly in love with him. I think she was going to tell him that she loved him in the finale of season 2. The look on her face when Castle leaves with his ex wife is total heartbreak. She has loved him for quite a while in my opinion. You also see it whenever Castle is in danger like in 3XK or Cops & Robbers. I think Castle even knows she's in love with him. Some of his looks after he catches her glances... he knows. But he also knows that it will never move past that until she puts her baggage behind her. Man! Could the possibly be any more adorable?! I for one love this! I love the 3 steps forward, 1 step back... I love being teased and I love the building tension!

Opmerking [S106]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 22, 2012

11:59 pm

FillKat

~~tyler said:~~

It's not about telling Castle. It's about admitting it to yourself that you are in fact in love. Has Beckett come to terms with being in love with Castle? Has she accepted that she is already in love with the guy? If she has why can't she say it. And that my friend is what Dr. Worf wanted her to admit. Bear in mind that you can have strong feelings toward someone, even be in a relationship with them and not be ready to label it as love. And we know that Beckett does love Castle. Why wont she say it? My personal opinion is that if she ever does say it, admit to her feelings for Castle, it means —> "the wall is down"—

tyler, this is my opinion as well-

Although I think Beckett has known for a long time she is in love with Castle. Her fears about his history, her fears about her own past and baggage, the list goes on, have prevented her from letting it surface. I think the therapy is helping her put her life, her expectations, her fears into perspective, ultimately allowing herself to accept what has always been there, and the ability to open herself to a life and love she either never thought possible or only dreamed of. She had become cynical, and pessimistic about love and what life was about for herself, and Castle came along and threw it all out the window. Just as the Mayor stated, Castle has a stubborn streak of optimism, an openness and honesty, which helped Kate realize her life could be different.

The therapy will help her to let go of her fears and open to the love and a life that only Castle can offer her, and allow her to be the person she wants to be and available to a relationship she can invest wholly and completely in with Castle.

Opmerking [S107]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 23, 2012

12:07 am

FillKat

RickNotCastle said:

I just rewatched "Eye of the Beholder" and something that struck me is the smile on Rick's face when Serena does not ask him back to her hotel at the end of the episode. Serena and Kate have their little talk about what a good guy Rick is. Then Kate leaves Serena and Rick alone, and Serena gives him the "I don't steal things that belong to someone else." She gives him a kiss on the cheek and walks off, and he is smiling. I think Serena just gave him the kind of boost he needed to keep waiting for Kate. She confirmed that it was obvious to her that Rick was "claimed" by Kate.

I hadn't thought about that scene in those terms before, but you just might have something there. I hadn't thought about how Castle might have interpret her comment as what she had gleaned from any behavior or comments coming from Kate. I had only interpreted her comments as an observation about how C/B had interacted with each other, or maybe something lacking in Castle's behavior toward herself, but I think maybe your interpretation might have more merit.

Opmerking [S108]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 23, 2012

2:31 am

grapes

Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love ,which everyone in love has ,have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?

January 23, 2012
6:48 am

Fitch

grapes said:

Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love ,which everyone in love has ,have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?

Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...

Two sips of coffee and double digit math ... ohboy ...

"For a successful technology, reality must take precedence over public relations, for nature cannot be fooled."— R. Feynman in the Feynman appendix to to the Challenger report. "It's Not Our Abilities That Show What We Truly Are. It's Our Choices." By Unknown to me.

January 23, 2012
10:18 am

RickNotCastle

~~Hmmm.~~ First, I do not think Beckett was in love with Castle at the end of Season 2. I think she finally acknowledged that there was something there more than just co-worker/friend. In my mind a lot of the dynamics in their interactions that season were about Beckett refusing to admit that she was interested in Castle at all. But when faced with the idea of him no longer being around, she was going to put aside her worries about whether or not it could actually work and ask him out. I definitely do not think she was getting ready to say "I love you" when Gina walked in. I think it was going to be more like "I have really enjoyed working with you, and I think we both need to stop pretending it is only work. How about we go on a real date and see what happens."

Second, I agree that at this point Beckett and Castle are both definitely in love. But they are both worried about it exploding in their faces. There is a lot of baggage on both sides, plus the secrets. I continue to think the reason there has not been any real advances in the "physical expression" is because they (mainly Beckett since the ball is definitely in her court at this point) are afraid of getting consumed in the passion of the relationship before she is ready to accept the emotions. Of course I

Opmerking [S109]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S110]: Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

think we are going to see them work through this stuff in the next ten episodes, so I expect some verbal declarations and definitely kissing by the end of this season.

But yes, I agree that the frustration should be getting to Beckett in a big way. We have gotten to see adoring looks and secret smiles, but I would love to see some kind of strain against the passion. She is hiding so much of what she is going through internally from Castle and her friends that it is in turn being hidden from the audience. Hopefully it is time for another scene with the therapist.

Now, when do I think Beckett really fell in love with Castle? I think Castle was actually in love with Beckett around the middle of Season 3 and Beckett followed a little after. A lot of their relationship development through the series really has been about growing as friends and partners. The fact that there was underlying attraction and passion is what kept the possibility of a romantic relationship alive the whole time. But just because you decide that someone is more awesome than anyone you have ever dated doesn't mean you are already in love with them. I think "To Live and Die in LA" sealed the deal for Beckett. When she got back to NY after that trip with Castle, she was ready to break it off with Josh and go for it with Castle.

Opmerking [S111]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

grapes said:

~~Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love, which everyone in love has, have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?~~

January 23, 2012
10:59 am

RickNotCastle

Fitch said:

grapes said:

~~Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love, which everyone in love has, have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?~~

Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...

Is the ball in Beckett's court? Yes.

Is the waiting driving Castle and Beckett crazy? Yes. Even though we have not seen it, it has to be.

Is the frustration for the audience horrible? Yes. Hopefully it will make the advances in the next episodes sweeter.

~~Is Beckett's behaviour unrealistic? No, I don't think so.~~

January 23, 2012

12:00 pm

ACF

~~RickNotCastle said:~~

~~Fitch said:~~

~~grapes said:~~

~~Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love, which everyone in love has, have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?~~

~~Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...~~

~~Is the ball in Beckett's court? Yes.~~

~~Is the waiting driving Castle and Beckett crazy? Yes. Even though we have not seen it, it has to be.~~

~~Is the frustration for the audience horrible? Yes. Hopefully it will make the advances in the next episodes sweeter.~~

~~Is Beckett's behaviour unrealistic? No, I don't think so.~~

Actually the fact that she hasn't just kissed the guy makes it more realistic for me. Once she does that, she'll be over the edge and gone with no chance of reeling herself back in. Remember, that wall is there to keep her safe from all manner of hurt. She built that wall because the loss of her mother was too much for her to bear. She "never wanted to hurt like that again". The fact that she could, while undercover, in an extremely dangerous situation for herself and her team, while supposedly exclusive with another man, kiss Castle and forget all of the first part of this sentence for a moment, must make her think twice, three times about initiating physical contact.

Opmerking [S112]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

And besides, the physical stuff is I believe, not on her radar right now. I know that sounds like it's impossible but I think it's true. Her therapy is intense, her job is intense, her life is intense. I really truly don't think she's looking for more intense – she's looking for comfort food not spicy tacos. And once she starts with Castle, it's going to be intense, that one kiss proved that.

Opmerking [S113]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

She's also had physical relationships before that carried little more than a He's-a-nice-guy vibe for her. She doesn't want that this time and I believe she's already feeling much more for Castle. She says it plain as day that she wants more. To tell the truth, with this wall coming down, I think one of the side effects is she finally moved past the high school/college mindset regarding personal relationships that she's been stuck in since her mom died. It's easy to do the physical stuff and not connect your heart.; make them disposable It's passion without promise and to me a baser form of

human interaction; the stuff of college hookups and partying. It takes more (the more she wants to be) to connect physical to the heart, to take the chance and do the work to make it stick.

Opmerking [S114]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.

Opmerking [S115]: Intimiteit

Opmerking [S116]: Emotionele reactie

Opmerking [S117]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S118]: Fantasie

Opmerking [S119]: Fantasie

Opmerking [S120]: Waardering karakters

Opmerking [S121]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Life is a great big canvas. Throw all the paint you can at it! ~Danny Kaye

January 23, 2012

12:16 pm

RickNotCastle

ACF said:

RickNotCastle said:

Fitch said:

grapes said:

Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love, which everyone in love has, have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?

Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...

Is the ball in Beckett's court? Yes.

Is the waiting driving Castle and Beckett crazy? Yes. Even though we have not seen it, it has to be.

Is the frustration for the audience horrible? Yes. Hopefully it will make the advances in the next episodes sweeter.

Is Beckett's behavior unrealistic? No, I don't think so.

Actually the fact that she hasn't just kissed the guy makes it more realistic for me. Once she does that, she'll be over the edge and gone with no chance of reeling herself back in. Remember, that wall is there to keep her safe from all manner of hurt. She built that wall because the loss of her mother was too much for her to bear. She "never wanted to hurt like that again". The fact that she could,

while undercover, in an extremely dangerous situation for herself and her team, while supposedly exclusive with another man, kiss Castle and forget all of the first part of this sentence for a moment, must make her think twice, three times about initiating physical contact.

And besides, the physical stuff is I believe, not on her radar right now. I know that sounds like it's impossible but I think it's true. Her therapy is intense, her job is intense, her life is intense. I really truly don't think she's looking for more intense — she's looking for comfort food not spicy tacos. And once she starts with Castle, it's going to be intense, that one kiss proved that.

She's also had physical relationships before that carried little more than a He's a nice guy vibe for her. She doesn't want that this time and I believe she's already feeling much more for Castle. She says it plain as day that she wants more. To tell the truth, with this wall coming down, I think one of the side effects is she finally moved past the high school/college mindset regarding personal relationships that she's been stuck in since her mom died. It's easy to do the physical stuff and not connect your heart.; make them disposable. It's passion without promise and to me a baser form of human interaction; the stuff of college hookups and partying. It takes more (the more she wants to be) to connect physical to the heart, to take the chance and do the work to make it stick.

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.

Great post ACF. I especially liked the part about the kiss from 3x13. I have tried several times to say something similar, but you probably said it better.

The last paragraph is interesting. I had not thought about her need to work through things on her own in that way, but I can totally see it.

January 23, 2012
12:20 pm

FillKat

grapes said:

..... Where does all that tension go to?

Yoga! (remember how she open the door to Castle, all hot and sweaty 😊)

Kickboxing

Morning workout

...and if all else fails, meditation. You have seen the buddha head in the entryway haven't you. If she does Yoga, there's a pretty good chance she does a bit of meditation, as well.

January 23, 2012

12:25 pm

Fitch

RickNotCastle said:

Fitch said:

grapes said:

Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love, which everyone in love has, have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?

Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...

-

Is the ball in Beckett's court? Yes.

Is the waiting driving Castle and Beckett crazy? Yes. Even though we have not seen it, it has to be.

Is the frustration for the audience horrible? Yes. Hopefully it will make the advances in the next episodes sweeter.

Is Beckett's behaviour unrealistic? No, I don't think so.

OK, how much longer is it realistic given their time together?

We see only the important selected few moments of their hours and hours together in the TV episodes. Maybe 2 minutes or less of every hour. What are they doing the rest of the time? These two have spent at least a couple thousand hours together over the last 4 years, maybe more, and that's assuming Castle is only with Beckett on a case for 25% of a normal working year and someplace else the rest of the time. That's a lot of time to be next to each other and not bringing "it" up.

I agree with 95% of your analysis. But, IMO if we are still here early next season (5x2) looking for the odd meaningful glance, it's off the rails of realism – they won't have jumped the shark, they will have sunk the tow boat.

Opmerking [S122]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S123]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S124]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S125]: Geen werkelijkheid

~~"For a successful technology, reality must take precedence over public relations, for nature cannot be fooled." R. Feynman in the Feynman appendix to to the Challenger report. "It's Not Our Abilities That Show What We Truly Are. It's Our Choices." By Unknown to me.~~

January 23, 2012

12:31 pm

Fitch

ACF said:

RickNotCastle said:

Fitch said:

grapes said:

~~Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love, which everyone in love has, have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?~~

~~Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...~~

~~Is the ball in Beckett's court? Yes.~~

~~Is the waiting driving Castle and Beckett crazy? Yes. Even though we have not seen it, it has to be.~~

~~Is the frustration for the audience horrible? Yes. Hopefully it will make the advances in the next episodes sweeter.~~

~~Is Beckett's behavior unrealistic? No, I don't think so.~~

~~Actually the fact that she hasn't just kissed the guy makes it more realistic for me. Once she does that, she'll be over the edge and gone with no chance of reeling herself back in. Remember, that wall is there to keep her safe from all manner of hurt. She built that wall because the loss of her mother was too much for her to bear. She "never wanted to hurt like that again". The fact that she could, while undercover, in an extremely dangerous situation for herself and her team, while supposedly exclusive with another man, kiss Castle and forget all of the first part of this sentence for a moment, must make her think twice, three times about initiating physical contact.~~

~~And besides, the physical stuff is I believe, not on her radar right now. I know that sounds like it's impossible but I think it's true. Her therapy is intense, her job is intense, her life is intense. I really truly don't think she's looking for more intense — she's looking for comfort food not spicy tacos. And once she starts with Castle, it's going to be intense, that one kiss proved that.~~

~~She's also had physical relationships before that carried little more than a He's a nice guy vibe for her. She doesn't want that this time and I believe she's already feeling much more for Castle. She~~

says it plain as day that she wants more. To tell the truth, with this wall coming down, I think one of the side effects is she finally moved past the high school/college mindset regarding personal relationships that she's been stuck in since her mom died. It's easy to do the physical stuff and not connect your heart,; make them disposable. It's passion without promise and to me a baser form of human interaction; the stuff of college hookups and partying. It takes more (the more she wants to be) to connect physical to the heart, to take the chance and do the work to make it stick.

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.

Excellent analysis. So is R N C's. Not sure I agree with all of it, but it is certainly very well thought through, and I might end up agreeing with all of it after I think about it some more.

"For a successful technology, reality must take precedence over public relations, for nature cannot be fooled." R. Feynman in the Feynman appendix to to the Challenger report. "It's Not Our Abilities That Show What We Truly Are. It's Our Choices." By Unknown to me.

January 23, 2012

12:41 pm

grapes

ACF said:

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her.

That has been in the back of my mind as well. It's not one of her good sides (!) but being a single child it tends to make sense. Most people I know that were single children are a lot like that as well. (Which is funny because Stana herself is the oldest of her bros and sisses and that's why her being bossy comes so natural. At least that's my theory.) But Castle being a single child as well probably can relate to that better than we do.

As to the character of Kate. I do miss seeing her frustrated some way or another. For me that would make it way more credible.

January 23, 2012

12:45 pm

1-and-done

Opmerking [S126]: Koppeling aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S127]: Fandom

Opmerking [S128]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S129]: Wensen

Fitch said:

OK, how much longer is it realistic given their time together?

We see only the important selected few moments of their hours and hours together in the TV episodes. Maybe 2 minutes or less of every hour. What are they doing the rest of the time? These two have spent at least a couple thousand hours together over the last 4 years, maybe more, and that's assuming Castle is only with Beckett on a case for 25% of a normal working year and someplace else the rest of the time. That's a lot of time to be next to each other and not bringing "it" up.

I agree with 95% of your analysis. But, IMO if we are still here early next season (5x2) looking for the odd meaningful glance, it's off the rails of realism — they won't have jumped the shark, they will have sunk the tow boat.

Why do you think that?

You really think they should've already done "it"? You really see frustration in either of them??

Actually, I can't. And why being so impatient with all of where and when this story is going?

Yeah, you're right, if "not having it done yet" is not realistic in your world. Maybe this is where the frustration comes from? I suggest doing yoga instead or try meditation, it may help.

Opmerking [S130]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S131]: Geen werkelijkheid

Whatttt?

January 23, 2012

12:54 pm

sonnenschein77

ACF said:

RickNotCastle said:

Fitch said:

Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...

-

Is the ball in Beckett's court? Yes.

Is the waiting driving Castle and Beckett crazy? Yes. Even though we have not seen it, it has to be.

Is the frustration for the audience horrible? Yes. Hopefully it will make the advances in the next episodes sweeter.

Is Beckett's behavior unrealistic? No, I don't think so.

Actually the fact that she hasn't just kissed the guy makes it more realistic for me. Once she does that, she'll be over the edge and gone with no chance of reeling herself back in. Remember, that wall is there to keep her safe from all manner of hurt. She built that wall because the loss of her mother was too much for her to bear. She "never wanted to hurt like that again". The fact that she could, while undercover, in an extremely dangerous situation for herself and her team, while supposedly exclusive with another man, kiss Castle and forget all of the first part of this sentence for a moment, must make her think twice, three times about initiating physical contact.

And besides, the physical stuff is I believe, not on her radar right now. I know that sounds like it's impossible but I think it's true. Her therapy is intense, her job is intense, her life is intense. I really truly don't think she's looking for more intense — she's looking for comfort food not spicy tacos. And once she starts with Castle, it's going to be intense, that one kiss proved that.

...

Great posts! And I absolutely agree, RNC & ACF! Especially with the bolded parts. The "not on her radar" part doesn't sound impossible at all, actually, it's quite realistic to me.

There is no curse!

Avatar by SKB

January 23, 2012

12:57 pm

1-and-done

ACF said:

...

Actually the fact that she hasn't just kissed the guy makes it more realistic for me. Once she does that, she'll be over the edge and gone with no chance of reeling herself back in. Remember, that wall is there to keep her safe from all manner of hurt. She built that wall because the loss of her mother was too much for her to bear. She "never wanted to hurt like that again". The fact that she could, while undercover, in an extremely dangerous situation for herself and her team, while supposedly exclusive with another man, kiss Castle and forget all of the first part of this sentence for a moment, must make her think twice, three times about initiating physical contact.

And besides, the physical stuff is I believe, not on her radar right now. I know that sounds like it's impossible but I think it's true. Her therapy is intense, her job is intense, her life is intense. I really truly don't think she's looking for more intense — she's looking for comfort food not spicy tacos. And once she starts with Castle, it's going to be intense, that one kiss proved that.

She's also had physical relationships before that carried little more than a He's a nice guy vibe for her. She doesn't want that this time and I believe she's already feeling much more for Castle. She says it plain as day that she wants more. To tell the truth, with this wall coming down, I think one of the side effects is she finally moved past the high school/college mindset regarding personal relationships that she's been stuck in since her mom died. It's easy to do the physical stuff and not

connect your heart,; make them disposable—It's passion without promise and to me a baser form of human interaction; the stuff of college hookups and partying.—It takes more (the more she wants to be) to connect physical to the heart, to take the chance and do the work to make it stick.—

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs.—It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her.—But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle.—So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better.—I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out.—He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same.—He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same.—It's their story, not mine.—

Nothing more to add.

Wonderful analysis, thanks, ACF!

Sometimes, uh... more like always I wish I had the language skills to express myself in here like you do!

Good, that I'm not a writer!

Whatttt?

January 23, 2012

1:13 pm

EspritdeTV

Fitch said:

OK, how much longer is it realistic given their time together?

We see only the important selected few moments of their hours and hours together in the TV episodes.—Maybe 2 minutes or less of every hour.—What are they doing the rest of the time?—These two have spent at least a couple thousand hours together over the last 4 years, maybe more, and that's assuming Castle is only with Beckett on a case for 25% of a normal working year and someplace else the rest of the time.—That's a lot of time to be next to each other and not bringing "it" up.—

I agree with 95% of your analysis.—But, IMO if we are still here early next season (5x2) looking for the odd meaningful glance, it's off the rails of realism — they won't have jumped the shark, they will have sunk the tow boat.

It's all a matter of perspective. If they were both single, into each other and totally emotionally available and stable, then I think you're right that it would be unrealistic for them not to have 'made

the move' yet. However, this isn't the case, for many reasons that have been addressed already, including (but not limited to):

1. Kate's obviously quite emotionally unstable and unavailable and is afraid of truly loving somebody.
2. Kate is obsessed with solving her mothers' murder.
3. Castle's got a family and an ex-wife, which complicates matters.

Opmerking [S132]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

My own personal experience informs my opinion of this, to a degree. I met my now-boyfriend many years ago and fell head over heels right away. There was a lot of 'tension' and flirting, but he was emotionally unavailable and I was dealing with stuff too. It took ages of sideways glances, flirtatious conversations and shoulder-touches before we finally got together.

Opmerking [S133]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

January 23, 2012

1:15 pm

FillKat

I think for most men (and correct me if I'm wrong here guys), if they make a move on a woman, she'll either respond or not, of course. If they find her worth pursuing, for whatever reason, they will or they will just let her go.

Opmerking [S134]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

In Castle's case, IMO, in the very first episode of the first season and at the end, he made his first move, she made it clear she wasn't going to let it happen, yet she didn't exactly say NO. I think for Castle, having a woman refuse his advances is not normal, yet he was smitten. He pursued her, in part because of his fascination with a woman that was unlike most of the other women in his life, and because she became a challenge for him. He would pursue her until she gave him an absolute NO.

Opmerking [S135]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

The part of this whole thing that has a bit of realism for me, is that every time one of them has accepted their feelings for the other and made an attempt to do something about it, the other shows up with someone else on their arm, thereby causing the backup and burying of feelings.

Opmerking [S136]: Geen werkelijkheid

I think if Castle didn't find Beckett as fascinating as he did/does and realize at some point (whenever that might have been) that it has become more than just fascination, he would have given up on her long ago, and let her go.

I think if Beckett had given him an absolute NO, he would be gone.

Opmerking [S137]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

IMO, Castle's definant optimism, and Beckett's slow dance with him and never saying NO, is part of why this has dragged on for so long, and in RL could be plausible. But to let it go on much longer, as others have said, especially now that both have figured out and accpeted their individual feelings for the other, and not act on it would not be plausible. Even though Kate has yet to clearly state her feelings for him, he knows.

Opmerking [S138]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 23, 2012

1:17 pm

RickNotCastle

Fitch said:

RickNotCastle said:

Fitch said:

grapes said:

Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love, which everyone in love has, have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to?

Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...

Is the ball in Beckett's court? Yes.

Is the waiting driving Castle and Beckett crazy? Yes. Even though we have not seen it, it has to be.

Is the frustration for the audience horrible? Yes. Hopefully it will make the advances in the next episodes sweeter.

Is Beckett's behavior unrealistic? No, I don't think so.

OK, how much longer is it realistic given their time together?

We see only the important selected few moments of their hours and hours together in the TV episodes. Maybe 2 minutes or less of every hour. What are they doing the rest of the time? These two have spent at least a couple thousand hours together over the last 4 years, maybe more, and that's assuming Castle is only with Beckett on a case for 25% of a normal working year and someplace else the rest of the time. That's a lot of time to be next to each other and not bringing "it" up.

I agree with 95% of your analysis. But, IMO if we are still here early next season (5x2) looking for the odd meaningful glance, it's off the rails of realism — they won't have jumped the shark, they will have sunk the tow boat.

Fitch, I completely agree with this last paragraph. If we start season 5 in the same place we are at now, I would be deeply disappointed in the show. But I do not see that happening. I actually expect a lot of movement in the Beckett/Castle relationship during the rest of this season. We have eleven more episodes, and everything is finally starting to fall into place. Beckett is in a much better place thanks to her therapy. There are no SOs around. We just need Beckett to decide she is ready and make a move.

January 23, 2012

1:19 pm

EspritdeTV

RickNotCastle said:

Opmerking [S139]: Voorspelling

Opmerking [S140]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S141]: Intimiteit

I actually expect a lot of movement in the Beckett/Castle relationship during the rest of this season. We have eleven more episodes, and everything is finally starting to fall into place. Beckett is in a much better place thanks to her therapy. There are no SOs around. We just need Beckett to decide she is ready and make a move.

It is definitely looking promising! I don't want to get my hopes up, but everything seems to be coming to a 'crescendo' in their relationship. They're not as antagonistic around each other, they're both becoming more emotionally available and warm to one another, and of course there are the spoilers about tonight's episode and the noir episode!

Opmerking [S142]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I am hopeful. Even if they don't totally get together, it would be nice to have some kind of open acknowledgement of their feelings for one another.

Opmerking [S143]: Wensen

January 24, 2012

1:19 am

tyler

ACF said:

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best, that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.

I'm not sure about the other stuff but on this part i have to respectfully disagree on. Because i don't see her as spoiled in anyway but instead as proud and independent. Seems like she doesn't realize that it's okay to ask for help sometimes (even for a strong independent woman). Thus the shrink is a healthy direction for the character.

Opmerking [S144]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

And emotion doesn't works on a timeline as much as you want to be better not have PTSD and remove the wall etc etc etc. it's not something you can control (although in this case it is AM controllable). I don't think it's selfish or spoiled to want to heal yourself and get better before moving forward. It would be selfish to expect someone to wait for you, but i don't see that in Beckett. She was willing to let Castle go and be happy with Serena, putting his happiness before her own, nope not spoiled behavior at all far from it in fact.

Opmerking [S145]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

***the thing i agree on is with Castle willingness to wait, he gets more and more lovable by the season.

Opmerking [S146]: Intimiteit

January 24, 2012

5:31 am

sonnenschein77

tyler said:

ACF said:

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.—

I'm not sure about the other stuff but on this part i have to respectfully disagree on. Because i don't see her as spoiled in anyway but instead as proud and independent. Seems like she doesn't realize that it's okay to ask for help sometimes (even for a strong independent woman). Thus the shrink is a healthy direction for the character.—

And emotion doesn't works on a timeline as much as you want to be better not have PTSD and remove the wall etc etc etc. it's not something you can control (although in this case it is AM controllable). I don't think it's selfish or spoiled to want to heal yourself and get better before moving forward. It would be selfish to expect someone to wait for you, but i don't see that in Beckett. She was willing to let Castle go and be happy with Serena, putting his happiness before her own, nope not spoiled behavior at all far from it in fact.—

***the thing i agree on is with Castle willingness to wait, he gets more and more lovable by the season.—

After thinking about it, on this part, tyler, I agree with you. It's more a being strong, proud and independent thing than an only child thing. Sometimes, depending on how your life is, oldest siblings show that or a similar behavior, too, because you're used to be "the boss", to take care of things, especially when there is a greater age difference...

Opmerking [S147]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 24, 2012

7:02 am

ACF

tyler said:

ACF said:

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others

needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.—

I'm not sure about the other stuff but on this part i have to respectfully disagree on. Because i don't see her as spoiled in anyway but instead as proud and independent. Seems like she doesn't realize that it's okay to ask for help sometimes (even for a strong independent woman). Thus the shrink is a healthy direction for the character.—

And emotion doesn't works on a timeline as much as you want to be better not have PTSD and remove the wall etc etc etc. it's not something you can control (although in this case it is AM controllable). I don't think it's selfish or spoiled to want to heal yourself and get better before moving forward. It would be selfish to expect someone to wait for you, but i don't see that in Beckett. She was willing to let Castle go and be happy with Serena, putting his happiness before her own, nope not spoiled behavior at all far from it in fact.—

***the thing i agree on is with Castle willingness to wait, he gets more and more lovable by the season.—

I'm right there with you tyler about wanting to heal being a good thing and understanding your limitations as far as how fast that healing will go. (Believe me, I've walked the PTSD path and I get it.) But I think there is a continuum between stubborn/selfish and proud/independent and we all have our tolerance level and definitions of when it becomes frustrating/annoying.

Opmerking [S148]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

It's my belief the problem comes when Beckett keeps using the excuses of the past as a way to put up more roadblocks instead of healing. Serena Kaye is a perfect example in fact. She's still using Castle's past against him, using that as an excuse for not taking the chance because she's still hiding behind that wall, a wall constructed because of a trauma yes, but constructed *of* the worst of her proud, stubborn, selfish behavior. In EYE, it's her wall that's the problem really, not Castle's past because if she were as proud and independent and sure of herself as I'm-a-Cop Beckett promotes herself to be, then a little thing like Serena wouldn't phase her. (There's an interesting contrast to Nikki Heat there that I have to think about. Hmm...) And you're right, Beckett did give Castle the option (how noble) to take Serena's offer. But we all know, as does Castle and Beckett too, that Serena was never any real threat. Castle was enthralled by another smart person who happened to be a woman, but his devotion to Beckett never strayed and hasn't strayed.

Opmerking [S149]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

If Beckett felt threatened because that smart, independent person happened to be a woman, then she isn't as much the strong, proud, independent woman she makes herself out to be. She talks the talk, but she doesn't walk the walk. She hides behind her cop persona as a way of convincing whomever she's talking to that her choices/behavior are warranted. (And maybe she's trying to convince herself too). How many times did we hear "I'm a cop" as an excuse for her behavior. It's almost like a mantra. It's an underlying theme of the show – *no one* is who they say they are, who they present themselves to be. The same theme came up in DIAL, this time from another supposedly

confident, independent and definitely proud female – the attorney who fled the scene. To paraphrase – "Don't you know who I am I'm XYZ. I don't get caught up in 123. I don't deserve to be judged as this because I present myself as that." It was a dodge, an attempt to avoid responsibility for the choices made. Beckett's been "saying" that for years!

I love her. I get what she's going through and I think the progress she's made is wonderful. And in fact, I'm probably more proud of her than many because I seem to be judging her so harshly; I can see just how far she's come. But I'm not afraid to say that there is part of her personality that gets in the way of her own progress and that part of her is what is frustrating to me. When I put her at her kitchen sink, when I get inside her head, I get it, I get all the choices, all the reasons, I get why she is like she is. But that doesn't make her 100%-lily-white-not-responsible-for-a-good-part-of-her-own-suffering. She could have handled a number of things differently that may have made things easier on her (and Castle). But again, it's not in her nature to do that. Her nature is, to my mind, a bit selfish, as all independent-minded people I think are. Only recently have her choices started to take into account anyone but herself. It's a continuum, like I said, and my tolerance is just different, I guess.

Opmerking [S150]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S151]: Intimiteit

Opmerking [S152]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Life is a great big canvas. Throw all the paint you can at it! ~Danny Kaye

January 24, 2012

9:45 am

lulu12345

~~tyler said:~~

~~It would be selfish to expect someone to wait for you, but i don't see that in Beckett. She was willing to let Castle go and be happy with Serena, putting his happiness before her own, nope not spoiled behavior at all far from it in fact.~~

~~That was in ep 5. She was not ready at that time so she decided to let him go which is a v unselfish thing to do.~~

~~Reveal Spoiler~~

~~But we also know there is an ex muse with a complicated history with castle coming during the 2 parter. Kate has come a long way since ep 5. The way she deals with the situation this time to the 'threat' should be interesting to see. At that time, we can properly guage how 'far' she has come !!!~~

January 24, 2012

6:52 pm

jerryst316

I think in many ways, this is a disagreement about world-view and the nature of agency and choice. The difference between agency and choice is interesting, agency is the ability to make a choice, and I think that's important here. Since the beginning, Castle has chosen to keep coming back, to keep following Beckett, and though she never said that they were inevitable and she, arguably, made the first move in season 2, none of that matters. His agency is his ability to chose his own path, to choose how he acts and where he chooses to stay.

Opmerking [S153]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

We afford that gift to Castle, we laud him for it, and we claim that the fact that he chooses to stick around makes him a good man.

Opmerking [S154]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

And yet, we don't afford the same courtesy to Beckett. Suddenly, when she chooses to NOT be with Castle, when she chooses a path that doesn't include him, we think she is a spoiled child who can't make the right decisions. That's the thing I strongly disagree with here, no matter whether you agree or not, Beckett has the right and the prerogative to say no and not be judged for that. If she doesn't want to be with Castle or she needs to work through things on her own time, that doesn't make her spoiled, it makes her an agent of her own person.

Opmerking [S155]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I think that's where world-view matters and the difference is never so plain than in the distinction I've drawn above. I don't care if Beckett says no to Castle for the rest of their lives, if she doesn't want to be with him, then that is her choice, and begrudging her for that is something I will never partake. Castle has the choice to leave at any time, he has the choice to give up, and we don't and won't begrudge him that agency, but I also think Beckett deserves the same right and privilege. She has the ability to choose never to be with him, she has the ability to choose whether or not her and Castle get together, and threatening that agency, that ability to choose, with a label of 'spoiled' is inappropriate in my opinion.

Opmerking [S156]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Ultimately, it is said that Castle never strayed and his devotion never wavered, and though that is noble, how can it be anything other than noble when a woman chooses to be better than what she was before? How can it be that a woman's right to say 'no' is somehow questioned even when the man is devoted? I don't care how devoted, how sure, how awesome a man Castle is or will be, we cannot question a woman's ability to choose NOT be in a relationship with him. I just don't think that's how it works nor do I think that's the way it should.

Opmerking [S157]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

ACF said:

tyler said:

ACF said:

~~I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best, that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.~~

It's my belief the problem comes when Beckett keeps using the excuses of the past as a way to put up more roadblocks instead of healing. Serena Kaye is a perfect example in fact. She's still using Castle's past against him, using that as an excuse for not taking the chance because she's still hiding behind that wall, a wall constructed because of a trauma yes, but constructed *of* the worst of her proud, stubborn, selfish behavior. In EYE, it's her wall that's the problem really, not Castle's past because if she were as proud and independent and sure of herself as I'm-a-Cop Beckett promotes

herself to be, then a little thing like Serena wouldn't phase her. (There's an interesting contrast to Nikki Heat there that I have to think about. Hmm...) And you're right, Beckett did give Castle the option (how noble) to take Serena's offer. But we all know, as does Castle and Beckett too, that Serena was never any real threat. Castle was enthralled by another smart person who happened to be a woman, but his devotion to Beckett never strayed and hasn't strayed.

Opmerking [S158]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S159]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 24, 2012

7:15 pm

grapes

ACF said:

I'm right there with you Tyler about wanting to heal being a good thing and understanding your limitations as far as how fast that healing will go. (Believe me, I've walked the PTSD path and I get it.) But I think there is a continuum between stubborn/selfish and proud/independent and we all have our tolerance level and definitions of when it becomes frustrating/annoying.

It's my belief the problem comes when Beckett keeps using the excuses of the past as a way to put up more roadblocks instead of healing. Serena Kaye is a perfect example in fact. She's still using Castle's past against him, using that as an excuse for not taking the chance because she's still hiding behind that wall, a wall constructed because of a trauma yes, but constructed ~~*of*~~ the worst of her proud, stubborn, selfish behavior. In EYE, it's her wall that's the problem really, not Castle's past because if she were as proud and independent and sure of herself as I'm a Cop Beckett promotes herself to be, then a little thing like Serena wouldn't phase her. (There's an interesting contrast to Nikki Heat there that I have to think about. Hmm...) And you're right, Beckett did give Castle the option (how noble) to take Serena's offer. But we all know, as does Castle and Beckett too, that Serena was never any real threat. Castle was enthralled by another smart person who happened to be a woman, but his devotion to Beckett never strayed and hasn't strayed.

If Beckett felt threatened because that smart, independent person happened to be a woman, then she isn't as much the strong, proud, independent woman she makes herself out to be. She talks the talk, but she doesn't walk the walk. She hides behind her cop persona as a way of convincing whomever she's talking to that her choices/behavior are warranted. (And maybe she's trying to convince herself too). How many times did we hear "I'm a cop" as an excuse for her behavior. It's almost like a mantra. It's an underlying theme of the show — ~~*no one*~~ is who they say they are, who they present themselves to be. The same theme came up in DIAL, this time from another supposedly confident, independent and definitely proud female — the attorney who fled the scene. To paraphrase — "Don't you know who I am I'm XYZ. I don't get caught up in 123. I don't deserve to be judged as this because I present myself as that." It was a dodge, an attempt to avoid responsibility for the choices made. Beckett's been "saying" that for years!

I love her. I get what she's going through and I think the progress she's made is wonderful. And in fact, I'm probably more proud of her than many because I seem to be judging her so harshly; I can see just how far she's come. But I'm not afraid to say that there is part of her personality that gets in the way of her own progress and that part of her is what is frustrating to me. When I put her at her kitchen sink, when I get inside her head, I get it, I get all the choices, all the reasons, I get why she is

like she is. But that doesn't make her 100% lily white not responsible for a good part of her own suffering. She could have handled a number of things differently that may have made things easier on her (and Castle). But again, it's not in her nature to do that. Her nature is, to my mind, a bit selfish, as all independent minded people I think are. Only recently have her choices started to take into account anyone but herself. It's a continuum, like I said, and my tolerance is just different, I guess.

Love this post and read it like dozens of times.

To me as well Kate seems to be selfish at times and used a lot of excuses to shield her off from emotions. But that can be a defense mechanism you use without realizing it yourself. And to that regard she seems to be quit out of touch with her inner self. Her job, her relationships and most of all her obsession with her moms case were inhibiting her from herself. To that extend reading Castle's books even were some kind of escapism. Maybe because we do want from her that she also found more in his books but I'm not sure if that sticks.

Living behind that wall also means that every time you see someone trying to peek over it you kick into defensive mode which in a male dominated environment doesn't stick out at all. But it wasn't her at all. She knew she wanted something different but being out of touch with yourself makes it hard to get a bearing. She would have without Castle but then it would have taken a lot longer and possible may have been way messier because in the end you can't hide from your true self.

Was she threatened by Serena or did she just feel insecure about herself and even looked up to Serena because she seemed to be so much in control with herself while she wasn't? She's not less than Serena and can be self assured proud and independent. Maybe she bites a bit more than she can chew but that's her stubborn side. She's coming around for sure but she still has to learn with her new self. When you learn to love yourself you are ready to love other people.

January 24, 2012

7:46 pm

ACF

I think I'm going to be moving to far off this topic in my reply so I moved it to the Beckett Onion Thread

jerryst316 said:

I think in many ways, this is a disagreement about world view and the nature of agency and choice. The difference between agency and choice is interesting, agency is the ability to make a choice, and I think that's important here. Since the beginning, Castle has chosen to keep coming back, to keep following Beckett, and though she never said that they were inevitable and she, arguably, made the first move in season 2, none of that matters. His agency is his ability to chose his own path, to choose how he acts and where he chooses to stay.

We afford that gift to Castle, we laud him for it, and we claim that the fact that he chooses to stick around makes him a good man.

Opmerking [S160]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S161]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S162]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

And yet, we don't afford the same courtesy to Beckett. Suddenly, when she chooses to NOT be with Castle, when she chooses a path that doesn't include him, we think she is a spoiled child who can't make the right decisions. That's the thing I strongly disagree with here, no matter whether you agree or not, Beckett has the right and the prerogative to say no and not be judged for that. If she doesn't want to be with Castle or she needs to work through things on her own time, that doesn't make her spoiled, it makes her an agent of her own person.

I think that's where world-view matters and the difference is never so plain than in the distinction I've drawn above. I don't care if Beckett says no to Castle for the rest of their lives, if she doesn't want to be with him, then that is her choice, and begrudging her for that is something I will never partake. Castle has the choice to leave at any time, he has the choice to give up, and we don't and won't begrudge him that agency, but I also think Beckett deserves the same right and privilege. She has the ability to choose never to be with him, she has the ability to choose whether or not her and Castle get together, and threatening that agency, that ability to choose, with a label of 'spoiled' is inappropriate in my opinion.

Ultimately, it is said that Castle never strayed and his devotion never wavered, and though that is noble, how can it be anything other than noble when a woman chooses to be better than what she was before? How can it be that a woman's right to say 'no' is somehow questioned even when the man is devoted? I don't care how devoted, how sure, how awesome a man Castle is or will be, we cannot question a woman's ability to choose NOT be in a relationship with him. I just don't think that's how it works nor do I think that's the way it should.

ACF said:

tyler said:

ACF said:

I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same. It's their story, not mine.—

It's my belief the problem comes when Beckett keeps using the excuses of the past as a way to put up more roadblocks instead of healing. Serena Kaye is a perfect example in fact. She's still using Castle's past against him, using that as an excuse for not taking the chance because she's still hiding behind that wall, a wall constructed because of a trauma yes, but constructed *of* the worst of her proud, stubborn, selfish behavior. In EYE, it's her wall that's the problem really, not Castle's past because if she were as proud and independent and sure of herself as I'm a Cop Beckett promotes herself to be, then a little thing like Serena wouldn't phase her. (There's an interesting contrast to Nikki Heat there that I have to think about. Hmm...) And you're right, Beckett did give Castle the

option (how noble) to take Serena's offer. But we all know, as does Castle and Beckett too, that Serena was never any real threat. Castle was enthralled by another smart person who happened to be a woman, but his devotion to Beckett never strayed and hasn't strayed.

Life is a great big canvas. Throw all the paint you can at it! ~Danny Kaye

January 24, 2012

7:52 pm

FillKat

jerryst316 said:

I think in many ways, this is a disagreement about world view and the nature of agency and choice. The difference between agency and choice is interesting, agency is the ability to make a choice, and I think that's important here. Since the beginning, Castle has chosen to keep coming back, to keep following Beckett, and though she never said that they were inevitable and she, arguably, made the first move in season 2, none of that matters. His agency is his ability to chose his own path, to choose how he acts and where he chooses to stay.

We afford that gift to Castle, we laud him for it, and we claim that the fact that he chooses to stick around makes him a good man.

And yet, we don't afford the same courtesy to Beckett. Suddenly, when she chooses to NOT be with Castle, when she chooses a path that doesn't include him, we think she is a spoiled child who can't make the right decisions. That's the thing I strongly disagree with here, no matter whether you agree or not, Beckett has the right and the prerogative to say no and not be judged for that. If she doesn't want to be with Castle or she needs to work through things on her own time, that doesn't make her spoiled, it makes her an agent of her own person.

I think that's where world view matters and the difference is never so plain than in the distinction I've drawn above. I don't care if Beckett says no to Castle for the rest of their lives, if she doesn't want to be with him, then that is her choice, and begrudging her for that is something I will never partake. Castle has the choice to leave at any time, he has the choice to give up, and we don't and won't begrudge him that agency, but I also think Beckett deserves the same right and privilege. She has the ability to choose never to be with him, she has the ability to choose whether or not her and Castle get together, and threatening that agency, that ability to choose, with a label of 'spoiled' is inappropriate in my opinion.

Ultimately, it is said that Castle never strayed and his devotion never wavered, and though that is noble, how can it be anything other than noble when a woman chooses to be better than what she was before? How can it be that a woman's right to say 'no' is somehow questioned even when the man is devoted? I don't care how devoted, how sure, how awesome a man Castle is or will be, we cannot question a woman's ability to choose NOT be in a relationship with him. I just don't think that's how it works nor do I think that's the way it should.

I think I agree with you. You write in a way that gives me the impression you have a level of understanding or communicating that may include perspectives different from mine, but ultimately I think we are the same page regarding Beckett and her situation with Castle.

Opmerking [S163]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I think the only thing I might quibble about would be the difference being a "world view". I think it may be more of a generational view.

January 24, 2012

11:58 pm

Bera

Hi all – I believe that Beckett does love Castle – pure & simple. Leaving out the fact that this is a TV show where the producers have an interest in spinning it out for the entire story arc, my opinion is that the situation set up is very credible for the characters as they are developed in the milieu that they live in.

Opmerking [S164]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S165]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

Why might Beckett be gun-shy about declaring herself? A bunch of factors: she was about to do *something* along that line at the end of Season 2, but was interrupted by Gina's arrival and the launch of "Cowstle II". [That's my term for Rick & Gina's second round of relationship.] She got waved off hard at the very moment she was about to make herself vulnerable, *and it happened in front of her team*. She had to have been hurt, embarrassed, confused...and possibly spent the summer thinking that Castle was fickle and she was well shot of him if he could hook up with Gina again.

Opmerking [S166]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Rick *does* have the background of having been married twice. This carries a different stigma, if you will, depending on your values about marriage – which is somewhat based on where you live. This is supposed to be a sophisticated, NYC kinda song & dance ("Sex & the City?" the works of Woody Allen?), and it doesn't match up to my personal values; but I'm totally willing to suspend disbelief based on what we know. Rick's been married twice – what made him take the plunge? – and he obviously does not share the view of "The One" [I don't either], based on his comments to Kyra Blaine. He's also dated a lot and talked with great vim & vigour about picking up tons of women at various points in his life. There's never been a situation where "Caskett" has really sat down & had a heart to heart nuts & bolts about relationship philosophies in front of the camera; in fact, Castle makes a point that they *don't* talk about the awkward moments that have happened. It's obvious he's catalogued them, and he thinks they are significant. Has it added up enough to make him be committed & stay faithful? Kate's gotta wonder about that. The thicker the armour, the more vulnerable the being underneath usually is.

Opmerking [S167]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

The people who have said that if Castle hasn't asked Beckett out on a date by now or *forced* the issue violates reality for them: I couldn't disagree more. They are *working* together; if the "hookup" goes south right away, then there's all kinds of awkwardness that ensues. There is some degree of physical attraction early on – she teases him – but she probably doesn't want to be a conquest, and I don't blame her at all. She's probably really nervous about a guy who's going to expect her to stop working, stop taking risks, be really domestic and I have to say that if it were reality that's a very valid worry. Remember the two-parter with Jordan Shaw & her astonishment that Shaw was a mom? I doubt the only thing Beckett learned from Shaw was better procedure.

I have friends who say they have to know someone 10 years before getting seriously involved with them; and I myself have long better part of an organization where, even if I didn't know a guy as a friend before going out with him, I usually knew *of* him. There's nothing really prudent in trying to make a relationship work that's based on a one-night pickup in a bar. I knew my husband casually (as in we had some of the same friends) for almost 25 years, and then we were good friends for a year before we ever went out on something approaching a date; we were both married to other people and had had one or two serious relationships in between first meeting and getting together. It may be bit more X-chromosome-oriented writing in truth, but the guys who say that women always know right away if they 'want' a guy in that way or not, especially for the long term, are dead wrong. It does help to spin out a TV series, it's true; but that doesn't make it total fantasy.

Opmerking [S168]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S169]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S170]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

I think Kate is naturally cautious about evaluating whether what she feels for someone means it will work. She was in love with Royce; I'm guessing he knew it, but neither of them ever said it. He may not have reciprocated; if he did, he was prudent enough to realize that was a no-no professionally all the way down. And I'm guessing she looked at it as objectively as she could and realized that it wouldn't work, and was probably driven by him being the "one who understood" about her mom's death. I can't imagine most of her boyfriends in her early 20s *did* understand – probably, if they knew, would have had all kinds of nasty and offbase things to say, and dismissed it as something they didn't want to deal with.

Opmerking [S171]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Castle's willing: this is one of the things about The Real Thing: you have to be willing to pay the price. I think Beckett knows deep down that Castle will never respect anyone who isn't a challenge; I don't think she's gaming him, but I think she trusted him enough to reveal that bit about herself in "Rise" that is giving him hope now. I think she's afraid to be vulnerable with a partner; it's one thing to ride motorcycles & have fun, but forever? You want someone who knows you deeply *and accepts what they know*.

Opmerking [S172]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

January 25, 2012
8:40 am

ACF

~~FillKat said:~~

~~I think I agree with you. You write in a way that gives me the impression you have a level of understanding or communicating that may include perspectives different from mine, but ultimately I think we are the same page regarding Beckett and her situation with Castle.~~

~~I think the only thing I might quibble about would be the difference being a "world view". I think it may be more of a generational view.~~

~~Oh my goodness, FillKate, way to make me feel old. I haven't even hit mid-century yet!~~

But you are right I think. I was thinking about this last night. I can remember listening to Martin Luther King and Bobby Kennedy on the television (and the radio! How's that for old). I grew up with the notion that we are responsible for our actions and how they affect not only us, but others. I was raised to believe that making sacrifices for your family and friends was nothing out of the ordinary and that good, kind people make the choice to reach out to others. 9/11, globalizaton of so many

things, internet, instant access to all matter of entertainment without ever setting foot outside one's home, social media that lets one make "friends" that will never been seen face-to-face – all those things take the human out of human interaction. They give credence to the belief that "no one will take care are me better than me" so it's every man for himself. And you young whipper-snappers have been raised in that crucible.

Opmerking [S173]: Persoonlijke informatie delen

So yes, I think you are right, it is a generational thing and have to say, I'm very glad I'm in mine.

And all that thinking had me thinking about something else... themes in Castle and how they impact how we look at our own lives. ~~Off to start a new thread...~~

Opmerking [S174]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Life is a great big canvas. Throw all the paint you can at it! ~Danny Kaye

January 25, 2012
10:32 am

tyler

Opmerking [S175]: Samenvattende rol

Hmm... I think things are snowballing in the wrong direction.

Let me see if we can bring everyone back on track.

*** Beckett is selfish because she uses her mum and the wall as an excuse time after time. Sorry I really cannot agree to this. When it comes to your own personal emotion how is it selfish? If you cannot let someone into your heart than it's not something that you can force. Doesn't really matter what her reason is to be honest (In Beckett case it's her Mum=Wall). From Beckett's character perspective what if she never gets better, it was the kinder choice to ask him to go. But Castle chooses to stay and wait out of his own free will. (Lets agree to disagree if your consensus is still firm on Beckett is selfish).

Opmerking [S176]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

However guys there is no need to be soooo gloomy about it..... this is a TV show where we know that :

Opmerking [S177]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

a) Beckett will get better. And.....

b) Castle and Beckett will be together... Hopefully in a timeline where we all can be happy with, and hopefully before watching the show causes involuntary nausea ← Guys if you are almost here or if you are already here i suggest switching channel to nickelodeon and watching spongebob. That guy could usually make anyone smile.

Opmerking [S178]: Voorspelling

So on to the initial discussion premise..... "Does Beckett Love Castle? Has she accepted that she is in love with him?"

So post on if you have anymore tidbits to affirm or negate the statement.

January 25, 2012
10:45 am

little eve

~~@ ACF: This made me smile... " globalization of so many things, internet, instant access to all matter of entertainment without ever setting foot outside one's home, social media that lets one make "friends" that will never been seen face to face —" haha, you mean like this board? I think I sort of belong to your generation (a few years younger I would guesstimate by the clues left if your post; -)) and I agree with you on the generational differences and their influence on our perceptions of the characters featured in Castle. However, these characters also belong to a particular generation or generations and their actions are as much guided by that as ours. That is something to take into consideration and I think you do, given what I've read in your posts.~~

Opmerking [S179]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S180]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

~~"Just waiting for my partner. Maybe you've seen her. Pretty girl. Thinks she can leap tall buildings in a single bound, carries the weight of the world on her shoulders, yet still manages to laugh at some of my jokes." — Castle, 4x09~~

~~January 25, 2012~~

~~11:08 am~~

~~ACF~~

~~little eve said:~~

~~@ ACF: This made me smile... " globalization of so many things, internet, instant access to all matter of entertainment without ever setting foot outside one's home, social media that lets one make "friends" that will never been seen face to face —" haha, you mean like this board? I think I sort of belong to your generation (a few years younger I would guesstimate by the clues left if your post; -)) and I agree with you on the generational differences and their influence on our perceptions of the characters featured in Castle. However, these characters also belong to a particular generation or generations and their actions are as much guided by that as ours. That is something to take into consideration and I think you do, given what I've read in your posts.~~

~~Heehee Exactly little eve! I'm a lifelong learner (My kids would say that's because I never get~~

~~anything right the first time...) so I'm trying to embrace whatever is out there, but we do retain what we were taught, don't we.~~

~~Back to the original premise of this thread... Does Beckett love Castle?~~

~~My answer — No.~~

~~Buuuuut....~~

~~Does Kate love Castle? my answer — Yes~~

~~{Ready, set, go! }~~

~~Life is a great big canvas. Throw all the paint you can at it! ~Danny Kaye~~

So happy for both of you! Love the show... looking forward to the big day :)
from: Leslie Fleming - Ohio
1/4/2012 8:02:29 PM

Opmerking [S181]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I'm so exciting for you. To have your wedding and on the show! It's fun to see weddings of the cast when they are NOT the main 2 characters. Wish I could see more of you and your partner take lead on some shows saving the becket and castle.
from: Dori Davison
1/4/2012 8:00:44 PM

Opmerking [S182]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Wishing you both the best for many years to come. Cant wait to see the photos. You guys make an adorable couple. What a proposoal Ryan; your such a lucky lady Jen.;) Absoulty love the show hopeful many more will come out of it.
from: Victoria <3
1/4/2012 7:53:16 PM

Opmerking [S183]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

Hope you have a wonderful 2nd wedding!!
from: Tracy
1/4/2012 7:46:44 PM

Congratulations and Best Wishes to you both!
from: Karen Lynn
1/4/2012 7:43:59 PM

Opmerking [S184]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I'm looking forward to a wonderful time at your wedding! You will both look fabulous! Enjoy! Love the show and all of you - amazing chemistry!
from: Karen - Wisconsin
1/4/2012 7:40:41 PM

Opmerking [S185]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratuations! May you be blessed with many happy years together. Remember 'never go to bed angry'.
from: Dale
1/4/2012 7:37:46 PM

Opmerking [S186]: Advies geven en persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congrats, you two. Many happy years together :)
from: Eleri
1/4/2012 7:28:00 PM

Opmerking [S187]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Can't wait to see the wedding!
Hope there is some epic kissing! ;-)
LOVE the show!
from: Susan
1/4/2012 7:18:22 PM

Opmerking [S188]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations!!!
from: Lynn
1/4/2012 7:15:37 PM

Congratulations! You two are beautiful together! I can't wait for the wedding - wishing you years of happiness!

Opmerking [S189]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

from: Audrey R.
1/4/2012 7:08:34 PM

Congratulations! Best wishes from Boston, MA!
from: Bailey
1/4/2012 7:07:29 PM

Opmerking [S190]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Wish you a lifetime and beyond of happiness and love. Congrats.
Danie or Farmville, NC
from: Danie Crawford
1/4/2012 6:55:59 PM

Opmerking [S191]:

Congrats to the happy couple....
from: Darlene Johnson of Surprise, Arizona
1/4/2012 6:52:13 PM

Opmerking [S192]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Wishing you years of joy and love
from: kj
1/4/2012 6:44:24 PM

Opmerking [S193]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Best wishes to the cutest couple ever from upstate NY :)
from: Nichole S.
1/4/2012 6:30:14 PM

Opmerking [S194]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congrats! I wish you all the best!
from: Emily
1/4/2012 6:26:22 PM

Opmerking [S195]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Wishing you the BEST life brings you.
May you be BLESSED with many happy years together. Wish I could be there!
HUGS!!!
Lisa (Houston, Texas)
from: Lisa McCreery
1/4/2012 6:20:14 PM

Opmerking [S196]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid en jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

About time. Congratulations. i can't wait to see it!
from: Awesome Person
1/4/2012 6:18:54 PM

Opmerking [S197]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Wishing you both many long and happy years together, and may the wind be always at your back and a smile upon your faces.

Opmerking [S198]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Martin, Kentucky
from: Rev. David Powers
1/4/2012 6:16:08 PM

Can't wait for the happy day!
from: Mary
1/4/2012 6:03:37 PM

Opmerking [S199]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Farmington, MN
from: Vickie West
1/4/2012 6:03:35 PM

Congrats! You two look great together!! =)

Opmerking [S200]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Best wishes from Buenos Aires, Argentina.
from: Eli
1/4/2012 5:59:11 PM

I'm a massive fan of the series and can't wait for the episode!!! Hoping for loads of Caskett fun :D You two are simple adorable together. Best wishes to you Kevin and Jenny! :)

Opmerking [S201]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

From Dallas, Texas
from: Callie Fisher
1/4/2012 5:48:11 PM

Congratulations, Kevin.
My best to Jennifer!
A long, fun, happy, loving, and adventure-filled life together.
from: Tom R.
1/4/2012 5:30:11 PM

Opmerking [S202]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hope all your dreams as a married couple come true! This wedding is going to be epic!! Best wishes from NJ!!
from: Vanessa E.
1/4/2012 5:26:16 PM

Opmerking [S203]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

My god bless u in a wonderful life together
from: Paul Kirkhuff
1/4/2012 5:20:31 PM

Opmerking [S204]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congrats from Miami Florida
from: Myrna Perez
1/4/2012 5:20:04 PM

Opmerking [S205]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Fr: Fairborn, Ohio

The wedding was beautiful.I am so glad you invited me.

Opmerking [S206]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

Happiness Forever
from: Myrna McCalla
1/4/2012 5:05:03 PM

Love Castle and I find it amazing how you can have your wedding the way you wanted it when you started out.
from: Tia Payne

Opmerking [S207]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 5:01:17 PM
... I wish it was me :(from OHIO but i want you to have a happy life together

Opmerking [S208]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

from: Megan
1/4/2012 4:42:50 PM

This is hilarious! I love Castle, I love all the characters, I love the Nikki Heat novels, and I especially love how everyone involved with the show is so creative and includes the fans every step of the way! Congratulations on all the success and I will definitely be watching the wedding on Monday night! :)

from: Jamie
1/4/2012 4:41:51 PM

Opmerking [S209]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid, deze persoon doorbreekt de muur

CAN'T WAIT HOPE IT IS AN AWESOME WONDERFUL DAY. HAVE A GREAT LIFE TOGETHER!

from: RRB
1/4/2012 4:32:35 PM

Opmerking [S210]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

May you have a long and happy life together. Can't wait to see the wedding next Monday.

Best Wishes from New Jersey
from: Sandy K.
1/4/2012 4:25:23 PM

Opmerking [S211]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations! You two are perfect for each other! Best wishes to both of you! So cute! :)

from: Kristyn Grant - Flower Mound, TX
1/4/2012 4:21:45 PM

Opmerking [S212]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Best Wishes and Many Happy Days.

from: Jodi hawes
1/4/2012 4:11:02 PM

Opmerking [S213]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations! I can't wait..

Vivan los novios!!! :)
from: Isabel, Almería, Spain
1/4/2012 4:08:47 PM

Opmerking [S214]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I am beyond happy for you two!! I wish you nothing but the best in your new life together and I hope you stay in love and remain happy till death do you part. <3

Much Love from Erin in Connecticut.
from: Erin F.
1/4/2012 3:59:22 PM

Opmerking [S215]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

have a wonderful wedding and a happy life together!!

from: lexi
1/4/2012 3:57:49 PM

Opmerking [S216]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations

from: Kara
1/4/2012 3:44:38 PM

Congrats guys! I hope you two live a long happy life together! |

from: Sam V from Minnesota
1/4/2012 3:44:37 PM

Opmerking [S218]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

So cute. Love you guys!
from: Aya Kroncke
1/4/2012 3:42:07 PM

Opmerking [S219]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations!! I hope you both have a long and happy life together! You both look so happy!!
from: Beth
1/4/2012 3:40:14 PM

Opmerking [S220]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations on your wedding? Hope you enjoy many years of honey -milk together!
from: Renee P.
1/4/2012 3:03:14 PM

Opmerking [S221]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

What a hoot! It's corny, but still I read the whole thing, including the comments!

And like someone else said, hope this brings back warm memories of your most special day....
Talea in Kansas City
from: talea
1/4/2012 2:49:55 PM

Opmerking [S222]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid en deze persoon doorbreekt ook de muur

Best wishes for a wonderful happy life together.
from: Peggy
1/4/2012 2:26:11 PM

Opmerking [S223]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Meilleurs vœux et félicitations depuis la Normandie, en France.

Opmerking [S224]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Best wishes!
from: Mathieu C.
1/4/2012 2:24:49 PM

Congrats! Wish you guys a life time of happiness:)
from: Leah B
1/4/2012 2:02:27 PM

Opmerking [S225]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

congratulations on ur wedding day may u both be very happy.
from: henry baker
1/4/2012 1:39:43 PM

Opmerking [S226]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

best wishes!!!
from: Nicole
1/4/2012 1:10:13 PM

Congratulations guys, the best luck for you two!
from: Senta, Munich, Germany
1/4/2012 12:53:45 PM

Opmerking [S227]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations on your upcoming nuptials!

Opmerking [S228]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

From the Author of The Locket Saga: When God Turned His Head.

from: Cygnet Brown
1/4/2012 12:50:03 PM

Best wishes, Congratulations

from: Maryanne-Kanata,Ontario,Canada
1/4/2012 12:31:37 PM

Congrats from Canada :)

from: Stacey F.
1/4/2012 12:29:48 PM

Congratulations! I love you guys. Best wishes, I can't wait!

Opmerking [S229]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid, intimiteit

from: Mafe A. in Lima, Peru
1/4/2012 12:26:13 PM

Only the best wishes for the happy couple

Opmerking [S230]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

from: Modene Lewellyn-Clinton,TN
1/4/2012 12:15:16 PM

Whoop! Hoo! Congrats!

from: Gwennlian in AZ
1/4/2012 12:12:02 PM

best wishes, hope you have many happy and hilarious years ahead of you

Opmerking [S231]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

from: Tracy Lewellyn-Clinton TN
1/4/2012 12:10:26 PM

Congratulations -- I can't wait to see the Wedding!

Opmerking [S232]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid en jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

from: Heidi
1/4/2012 11:36:08 AM

Congrats from the sweetheart city Loveland,CO USA

from: Marcia
1/4/2012 11:27:08 AM

Congrats! I hope you have a wonderful life together! :)

Opmerking [S233]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

From: Illinos -H.E.

from: kayla
1/4/2012 11:15:19 AM

May you be as happy together as you are in real life x

Opmerking [S234]: Doorbreken van de muur

from: helen
1/4/2012 11:14:35 AM

Congratulations to you both! I wish you all the best for the future. :-)

Opmerking [S235]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

from: M

1/4/2012 10:44:12 AM

Congratulations to you both and best wishes from Ourense, Spain. You guys are made for each other. <3
from: Alba

Opmerking [S236]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 10:41:33 AM

Wonderful luck. I love weddings
from: dawn

Opmerking [S237]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 10:28:15 AM

Congrats from Sweet Home Alabama, USA. -Ill be the one weeping in the back corner.
from: Alyssa

Opmerking [S238]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid en jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

1/4/2012 10:25:55 AM

Happy WEDding day!

Cheers from FRANCE
from: ophelia

Opmerking [S239]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 10:23:09 AM

Looking forward to it! Congratulations to both!

from: Carol

Opmerking [S240]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 10:13:16 AM

~~Congrats from Hungary! :-)~~

~~from: Gabor~~

~~1/4/2012 9:54:38 AM~~

Congratulations to both of you! Wishing you a very happy life together! :-)

from: Matt

Opmerking [S241]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 9:35:16 AM

Congratulations to you from Poland! I'm so happy :d

from: Gosia

Opmerking [S242]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 9:30:25 AM

WISHING YOU BOTH ALL THE BEST FOR YOUR FUTURE.

FROM ENGLAND (UK)

from: SUE LAPPER

Opmerking [S243]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 9:29:44 AM

Congrats! Have fun, and I wish you both the best!

from: Nicole

Opmerking [S244]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 9:22:15 AM

Félicitation depuis la France, vous être trop mignon tout les deux

from: Tiphaine

Opmerking [S245]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

1/4/2012 9:14:26 AM

Congrats to you both!

from: Tas
1/4/2012 9:05:18 AM

Can't wait-each week is better than before-your wedding should be amazing
from: Cathy in Ocala
1/4/2012 9:01:24 AM

Opmerking [S246]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

~~Congrats on the wedding from England~~
from: Kirsty
1/4/2012 8:50:00 AM

Can't wait for the wedding! Have fun and congratulations. Love from Malaysia.
from: Sabrina
1/4/2012 8:44:24 AM

Opmerking [S247]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hey!A verry good news that the announcement of your wedding.I love you so much.I wish happiness to you both!
Mariane,France
from: Mariane
1/4/2012 8:42:27 AM

Opmerking [S248]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Thanks for sharing real pics to support the storyline of the show. I hope filming this episode allowed you to relive a joyous moment in your lives.
from: Katy in Utah
1/4/2012 8:35:16 AM

Opmerking [S249]: Doorbreken van de muur

Congrats! Can't wait till next week! And I bet neither can you ;-)
Greetings from the Netherlands!
from: Marije
1/4/2012 8:31:07 AM

Opmerking [S250]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid !!!!!!! Nederlander

Hope both of you a lot of happiness because you deserve it. Together you look really really cute.
A big hug from Valencia, Spain
from: Alba de Juan
1/4/2012 8:30:05 AM

Opmerking [S251]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

~~Congrats from Dallas Texas....~~
from: Sandra Smith
1/4/2012 8:23:42 AM

I love you both I'm from France in a very small town named FIGEAC <3
from: Mathilde
1/4/2012 8:02:21 AM

Opmerking [S252]: Persoonlijke informatie delen

Félicitation à vous deux et tous mes voeux de bonheur!!..
from: Aurel
1/4/2012 8:01:03 AM

Opmerking [S253]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

You two are made for each other! It seems like you've been married for years already! May many seasons pass with you two as happy as you are now!
from: d
1/4/2012 7:50:15 AM

Opmerking [S254]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Best wishes, you're the perfect couple ! ;) ?
from: Pauline
1/4/2012 7:00:42 AM

Opmerking [S255]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Mazaltov' to you too ! Wish you all the best (including to drink the best wine ;p) !:D
from: Nini
1/4/2012 6:56:50 AM

Opmerking [S256]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Really excited for your wedding! Love you guys here in Pittsburgh PA!
from: anitamsommers@hotmail.com
1/4/2012 6:41:14 AM

Opmerking [S257]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations, you two!
Never stop being adorable, and may your life together be a wondrous adventure!
from: Emily Sullivan
1/4/2012 6:30:36 AM

Opmerking [S258]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Best of wishes! You two deserve it!:)
from: Sarah B
1/4/2012 5:56:30 AM

Opmerking [S259]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

You guys are great for each other. I hope you have a wonderful day! Best wishes from Thailand.
Best wishes
Alexandra
from: Alexandra
1/4/2012 5:55:26 AM

Opmerking [S260]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I hope you have a wonderful life together. I hope the day goes to plan as well. All my love
Georgy x
from: Georgy Farrington
1/4/2012 5:42:43 AM

Opmerking [S261]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Dear Jennifer & Kevin,
I hope you have a wonderful day, and enjoy the rest of your life together.
Lots of Love,
Dineli
from: Dineli Kalansuriya
1/4/2012 4:38:15 AM

Opmerking [S262]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I hope Kate will go your wedding with me!
from: Rick Castle
1/4/2012 4:12:02 AM

Opmerking [S263]: Leuk bij het beschrijven van de illusie die wordt gecreëerd. Deze respondent doet zich voor al Castle. Dit is dus het delen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I hope Castle will go to your wedding with me!

Opmerking [S264]: Hetzelfde maar dan met Kate

from: Mel
1/4/2012 1:50:10 AM

Congrats guys!
p.s. hope castle and beckett decide to follow your steps soon (;
from: Katherine Hasbrouck
1/4/2012 1:35:36 AM

Opmerking [S275]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congrats to a great couple...looking forward to 1/9/12.
from: Les & Ryan from Fresno, California
1/4/2012 1:19:28 AM

Opmerking [S276]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Lots of love and Congratulations!
Best wishes!

Opmerking [S277]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Muchas Felicidades!
- Emily from Puerto Rico :D
from: Emily Borges
1/4/2012 1:09:55 AM

Opmerking [S278]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Good Luck you guys I wish you all the happiness in the world
from: Abbie Rix
1/4/2012 12:58:18 AM

Opmerking [S279]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

May all your realities be happy ones

Please throw the bouquet to Kate
from: jjship
1/4/2012 12:50:54 AM

Opmerking [S280]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid en advies geven

Congratulations! I hope this day is even better than your most perfect of dreams. You two are extraordinary. Here's to beating the odds!

Opmerking [S281]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Always,
Erin
from: Erin Lee
1/4/2012 12:39:40 AM

Feb 22, 5:11

- [jnorton45](#)
- **Member since:** Aug 22, 2009
- **Posts:** 1132
- [See all posts](#)

~~Proposed that in order to capture much more of the 18-49 demo Castle and Beckett have to get it on hot and heavy. The sooner the better.~~

First, I'm 66 and have been married to the same woman for 42 years. Second, and more important, I have a 30 year old single daughter who is dating a 37 year old guy with a 6 year old daughter.

My daughter has a significant number of female friends and acquaintances who have been in relationships, but have not gotten to anything permanent. The relationships run the gamete from three dates and gone to married with children and divorced. They are in Beckett's demographic. They identify with her on many real and aspirational levels. These twenty and thirty something women want a good relationship with a good guy. They want it NOW.

Opmerking [S282]: Persoonlijke informatie delen en koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S283]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Many guys that my daughter knows in the same age group have been on the other side of these not so permanent relationships. Some, though not as many as the women, have come to realize that they want a decent relationship with a smart, competent, good woman. Some have kids and are involved with their lives. The older they are the more likely they are to realize this want. They tend to want this relationship much sooner rather than later.

Opmerking [S284]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

The members of these two groups, the 18-49 demo, do realize the risks involved in relationships. They do not want to waste time answering all the questions that will eliminate all the risks in a relationship. They want the big stuff covered, but then they will fight through the rest.

They want to watch a TV show where a couple that they can identify with answers the big stuff, get's it together and fights through the rest of a relationship. They do not want to watch a couple, Castle and Beckett, dance around forever. They do not identify with those people. They think they are boring and idiotic. They do not want to be like them or watch people who are like them. If that is what is on TV, they'll turn the channel and watch suff blowup on H5O.

Opmerking [S285]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

To capture more of the 18-49 demographic Castle and Beckett have to be more like the 30 somethings who are in a hurry to get into a solid, romantic, familial relationship. They do not want to watch them dance around without that fulfillment. That is more than boring to the 18-49 demo. It is depressing and nobody watches depressing television for long.

Opmerking [S286]: Advies geven

Feb 22, 6:40

- [glitter1948](#)
- **Member since:** Feb 5, 2011
- **Posts:** 492
- [See all posts](#)

~~Yes. I totally agree. Maybe we need a younger writer...~~

Glitter

Feb 22, 6:41

- [rugbyreff](#)
- **Member since:** Aug 19, 2011
- **Posts:** 1303
- [See all posts](#)

~~That's some pretty interesting evidence to back up your argument!!~~

Anyway, I do agree, and what you say makes a lot of sense. The ultimate way for the ratings to come back is for there to be a hook-up of some kind, but the message I kind of got - and a lot of others picked up on - was that AM was trying to use Sofia to prove a point about what getting together can do to a relationship. That it can ruin the spark if C&B get together like Sofia and Castle did back in the day.

But I am 100% sure that AM and co can write a better relationship than this so-called moonlighting curse. But time is running short, and I think between now and the end of the season is the best opportunity to use that power-up and get the ratings up before the end of the season.

Opmerking [S287]: Advies geven
Kritiek makers

Feb 22, 7:27

- [halaci](#)
- **Member since:** May 9, 2010
- **Posts:** 327
- [See all posts](#)

~~Interesting idea and I like the logic.~~

~~Sex and the City started in 1998, Bridget Jones Diary was launched in 2001. Those were the "behaviour trend", accepting (sometime praising) to be single on one hand and showing the relationships only from the try and error side on the other hand. But that was more than ten years ago and it both became outdated and boring. Hollywood works like the armies, which are always trained and equipped to win the last war - not the next one.~~

I said from the very first moment that the real gem in Castle is that the two characters are so different in many ways that it can be a long and winding road to them to fully accept each other and it is much more interesting watching this in progress, than waiting until they miraculously be ready for perfection.

I think AM's greatest mistake is that he wants to depict his Heroic Love Story as it is possible to create separately. He thinks that if they work on it together - and I agree that there is a lot of work ahead of them - that would be a less satisfying experience to the audience than if he drives them through all the bushes alone.

Opmerking [S288]: Kritiek makers

I can tell only my opinion, but had they admitted their wishes (ie: they want to try it seriously together) at the end of S3 instead of the stupid act to kill Montgomery and put the secrets roadblock and after it everything would have happened in almost exactly the same way and same pace in S4 as it has already happened, I would be one of the lead oarsman of this ship instead of wanting to bail out. A real kiss would have been probably due for now, but why not?

Opmerking [S289]: Advies geven

Feb 22, 11:00

- [Kastellian64](#)
- **Member since:** Apr 14, 2011
- **Posts:** 178
- [See all posts](#)

I keep seeing comments saying 'we need a kiss', and I understand the frustration - I really do - but I just don't think they can go there. As Arky said once (before he mostly stopped posting here) 'if they kissed, they wouldn't have reached a soft surface' (he was talking about the LA hotel scene, but the sentiment is the same). A kiss is a really intimate thing and once they get to that point the cat's out of the bag on the relationship and there would be no stopping them. These people are supposed to be 'in love', so the whole dating scenario is also doubtful - they would be straight into being wholly in a relationship (they are supposedly already in a relationship of sorts).

Opmerking [S290]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakters

So far the only physical contact they have had is the odd hand-holding incident and a couple of nudges, apart from the 'undercover kiss'. I think we could chance a hug soon (gosh, don't want to rush them or anything!) but a hug can be less intimate depending on the circumstances, and I think we really need one.

Opmerking [S291]: Voorspelling karakters

I totally agree with the OP, that the younger demographic would respond to more sizzle on a regular basis, and it would be so good to have a functioning (mostly) adult relationship to watch - it could be so compelling if done well. People want to see how much they mean to eachother. We can but hope that TPTB and AM wake up soon, before they really have left it too late.

Opmerking [S292]: Advies geven

Feb 22, 11:19

- [halaci](#)
- **Member since:** May 9, 2010
- **Posts:** 327
- [See all posts](#)

Kastellian64 said...

~~I keep seeing comments saying 'we need a kiss', and I understand the frustration - I really do - but I just don't think they can go there. As Arky said once (before he mostly stopped posting here) 'if they kissed, they wouldn't have reached a soft surface' (he was talking about the LA hotel scene, but the sentiment is the same). A kiss is a really intimate thing and once they get to that point the cat's out of the bag on the relationship and there would be no stopping them. These people are supposed to be 'in love', so the whole dating scenario is also doubtful - they~~

would be straight into being wholly in a relationship (they are supposedly already in a relationship of sorts).

And why would it be so terrible? I agree that after four years and a lot of told-but-never-shown burgers, coffees, Old Haunts, family dinners and breakfasts (she lived with them for days after Tick, Tick) the whole dating thing is a bit off and passed, but otherwise? Why is it tragical if two independent, mature (and attractive) adults, with plenty of experiences behind them, lives sexuality in a natural way? That it's nice, the first occasion has a special importance, but as much as it is essential, it is not more than ONE PART of a relationship. I don't think that anybody picture them as someones who can not enjoy it and I think their characterisation has passed the point long ago where it could be said that it is only lust.

Opmerking [S293]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van karakters

The funny thing is that I don't wish to see any of them, not in a way as the squeling twitter-fans wish. I will be glad if it will be shown and I think in todays television it has to be shown, otherwise a huge dramaturgy peak would have just thrown off of the window, but I don't want it to happen to watch it ten thousand times and make animated gifs of it.

I want it to happen because I think that it is necessary to see the rest of their story and I consider it much more interesting than the n+1st version of "sign of being comfortable with each other".

Feb 22, 11:38

- [Kastellian64](#)
- **Member since:** Apr 14, 2011
- **Posts:** 178
- [See all posts](#)

It wouldn't be terrible at all! My point is that I don't think we'll get a kiss until they are ready to go the whole hog on the relationship - unless we get a heat-of-the-moment can't-stop-themselves and then Beckett runs a mile in panic scenario - which I would hate. That would stall the ship a bit longer, but I wouldn't put it past AM to go this way.

Opmerking [S294]: Kritiek makers en voorspelling karakters

Feb 22, 11:58

- [halaci](#)
- **Member since:** May 9, 2010
- **Posts:** 327
- [See all posts](#)

Kastellian64 said...

It wouldn't be terrible at all! My point is that I don't think we'll get a kiss until they are ready to go the whole hog on the relationship - unless we get a heat of the moment can't stop themselves and then Beckett runs a mile in panic scenario - which I would hate. That would stall the ship a bit longer, but I wouldn't put it past AM to go this way.

-

Ok, sorry, I misunderstood you. No, the "I'm freaked out" scenario must be forgotten, I don't even want to think of it. I think however that I won't be convinced any better than I'm now

~~about their readiness, not with two or three more anvilicious comments or long glances, so let's move on.~~

Feb 22, 12:14

- [rugbyreff](#)
- **Member since:** Aug 19, 2011
- **Posts:** 1303
- [See all posts](#)

~~As another poster basically said, if they kiss, then there is definitely no going back. And that is definitely true, and it basically means the writers have to go all at it to make it good enough for us fans~~

All I want to see is a hug. And there were several opportunities missed in the 2-parter where one might have been appropriate. And a hug only needs to be at a comforting moment, like some bad news which I know will come sometime soon-ish now that Castle's father was mentioned in Linchpin

Opmerking [S295]: wensen

Feb 22, 12:28

- [lor24](#)
- **Member since:** Oct 11, 2011
- **Posts:** 103
- [See all posts](#)

A hug on the pier looking over the water where they almost die.. It just seems like they(TPTB) won't even go there for some reason. It's a hug. They save each-others lives for the love of... Kate saying thank you. Anyway, Probably not the right thread or topic..but one thing that caught my attention... Kate keeps calling Rick "Castle".. when Esposito came up all sarcastic about him not not knowing what is going on. she went right to "i'm sorry javi" ugg are you kidding me.. Castle keeps saving her life they are supposed to be in love and never once does she say Rick.. To intimate i guess..

Opmerking [S296]: fantasie

Opmerking [S297]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van de karakters

Feb 22, 16:21

- [Kelly641980](#)
- **Member since:** Sep 3, 2011
- **Posts:** 2390
- [See all posts](#)

~~jnorton45 said...~~

~~Proposed that in order to capture much more of the 18-49 demo Castle and Beckett have to get it on hot and heavy. The sooner the better.~~

~~First, I'm 66 and have been married to the same woman for 42 years. Second, and more important, I have a 30-year-old single daughter who is dating a 37-year-old guy with a 6-year-old daughter.~~

~~My daughter has a significant number of female friends and acquaintances who have been in relationships, but have not gotten to anything permanent. The relationships run the gamete from three dates and gone to married with children and divorced. They are in Beckett's demographic. They identify with her on many real and aspirational levels. These twenty and thirty something women want a good relationship with a good guy. They want it NOW.~~

~~Many guys that my daughter knows in the same age group have been on the other side of these not so permanent relationships. Some, though not as many as the women, have come to realize that they want a decent relationship with a smart, competent, good woman. Some have kids and are involved with their lives. The older they are the more likely they are to realize this want. They tend to want this relationship much sooner rather than later.~~

~~The members of these two groups, the 18-49 demo, do realize the risks involved in relationships. They do not want to waste time answering all the questions that will eliminate all the risks in a relationship. They want the big stuff covered, but then they will fight through the rest.~~

~~They want to watch a TV show where a couple that they can identify with answers the big stuff, get's it together and fights through the rest of a relationship. They do not want to watch a couple, Castle and Beckett, dance around forever. They do not identify with those people. They think they are boring and idiotic. They do not want to be like them or watch people who are like them. If that is what is on TV, they'll turn the channel and watch suff blowup on H5O.~~

~~To capture more of the 18-49 demographic Castle and Beckett have to be more like the 30 somethings who are in a hurry to get into a solid, romantic, familial relationship. They do not want to watch them dance around without that fulfillment. That is more than boring to the 18-49 demo. It is depressing and nobody watches depressing television for long.~~

~~-
This is so true! I said in the ratings post I believe that if they just start moving this relationship realistically, the viewers will come back in droves. Your examples of you daughter and friends is so true. I also agree with everything Mig said above.~~

~~And AM's supposed point that if Castle and Beckett had gotten together too soon they would have ended up like Sophia/Rick.....they passed that point more than a season ago. Give us something like a real relationship and the ratings will go up! It's not that hard.~~

Feb 22, 16:32

- [EastCoastCastle](#)
- **Member since:** Feb 8, 2012
- **Posts:** 23
- [See all posts](#)

~~I agree. A relationship between the two would appeal to the 18-49 Demo. This generation (for the most part) have grown up using computers. The younger ones have grown up using instant messaging, twitter, texting etc. All things which are fast paced, immediate and now. Unlike the Caskett relationship.~~

Opmerking [S298]: Advies en kritiek makers

Opmerking [S299]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

The other big draw for this age group is sex, or a more blatant promise of sex. I am not talking of people jumping in and out of bed together. That's not what the show is about. But as someone at the far end of this particular age group, a hot scene or two once in awhile would be appreciated.

Opmerking [S300]: Advies/wensen

I think I can safely say IMO, that Generation Y may be a little more impatient. This may explain why some of us are getting frustrated, and why at this point in time, Castle is not attracting a huge audience from this age group.

Feb 22, 16:36

- [jn1414](#)
- **Member since:** May 18, 2010
- **Posts:** 283
- [See all posts](#)

Sadly, I must agree with JNortos45's very astute post. I say sadly because his post points out a mistake by TPTB that could doom my favorite show. I have college age daughters and they've lost their interest in Castle for exactly the reasons JNorton points out. Even my wife, who is not in that 18-49 demographic has given up the show, she says its "boring now". I fear that AM's purpose now is to kill Caskett, (Sophia's speech), not move it forward. He seems to think consumating the relationship will kill the show (Moonlighting curse) so his only alternative is to kill the relationship, have C&B move on, and then refocus the shows on the cases. It won't work, the show will fail and will be cancelled and that would make me sad as I really do enjoy all of the characters and so much of the writing etc. I am still grasping at the hope that Beckett's comment about "Sophia told a lot of lies" really does mean that she did not take Sophia's speech to heart but it just doesn't feel that way to me. I sure hope that I am 100% wrong about all this but I guess we'll just have to wait and see

Opmerking [S301]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S302]: Kritiek makers

Opmerking [S303]: Niet begrijpen gevoelens karakters en voorspelling karakters

Feb 22, 16:41

- [MigalouchUD](#)
- **Member since:** Mar 23, 2010
- **Posts:** 3276
- [See all posts](#)

jn1414 said...

Sadly, I must agree with JNortos45's very astute post. I say sadly because his post points out a mistake by TPTB that could doom my favorite show. I have college age daughters and they've lost their interest in Castle for exactly the reasons JNorton points out. Even my wife, who is not in that 18-49 demographic has given up the show, she says its "boring now". I fear that AM's purpose now is to kill Caskett, (Sophia's speech), not move it forward. He seems to think consumating the relationship will kill the show (Moonlighting curse) so his only alternative is to kill the relationship, have C&B move on, and then refocus the shows on the cases. It won't work, the show will fail and will be cancelled and that would make me sad as I really do enjoy all of the characters and so much of the writing etc. I am still grasping at the hope that Beckett's comment about "Sophia told a lot of lies" really does mean that she did not take Sophia's speech to heart but it just doesn't feel that way to me. I sure hope that I am 100% wrong about all this but I guess we'll just have to wait and see

~~Ironically its AM's fear of the Moonlighting curse that is in reality killing the show, and not the curse that he so vehemently is trying to avoid.~~

Feb 22, 16:41

- [LoveMysteryC](#)
- **Member since:** May 28, 2011
- **Posts:** 228
- [See all posts](#)

~~rugbyreff said...~~

~~That's some pretty interesting evidence to back up your argument!!~~

~~Anyway, I do agree, and what you say makes a lot of sense. The ultimate way for the ratings to come back is for there to be a hook up of some kind, but the message I kind of got—and a lot of others picked up on—was that AM was trying to use Sofia to prove a point about what getting together can do to a relationship. That it can ruin the spark if C&B get together like Sofia and Castle did back in the day.~~

~~But I am 100% sure that AM and co can write a better relationship than this so-called moonlighting curse. But time is running short, and I think between now and the end of the season is the best opportunity to use that power up and get the ratings up before the end of the season~~

~~*****~~

~~Jeff, that part of the episode was put in to give us the "Oh No's" and it apparently worked. But at the end, Beckett didn't buy what Sophia was selling. She knew it was all a lie and that her relationship with Rick would be different. He told her so.~~

Opmerking [S304]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Feb 22, 17:02

- [wesleyg7](#)
- **Member since:** Oct 6, 2011
- **Posts:** 734
- [See all posts](#)

~~LoveMysteryC said...~~

~~rugbyreff said...~~

~~That's some pretty interesting evidence to back up your argument!!~~

~~Anyway, I do agree, and what you say makes a lot of sense. The ultimate way for the ratings to come back is for there to be a hook up of some kind, but the message I kind of got—and a lot of others picked up on—was that AM was trying to use Sofia to prove a point about what getting together can do to a relationship. That it can ruin the spark if C&B get together like Sofia and Castle did back in the day.~~

~~But I am 100% sure that AM and co can write a better relationship than this so-called moonlighting curse. But time is running short, and I think between now and the end of the~~

season is the best opportunity to use that power up and get the ratings up before the end of the season

Jeff, that part of the episode was put in to give us the "Oh No's" and it apparently worked. But at the end, Beckett didn't buy what Sophia was selling. She knew it was all a lie and that her relationship with Rick would be different. He told her so.

I agree but I'm getting bored with them doing so only in subtext so the characters themselves can keep avoiding the actual subject. That's what leaves it to interpretation and it shouldn't.

Opmerking [S305]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Feb 22, 17:33

- [sarahcat65](#)
- **Member since:** Sep 28, 2010
- **Posts:** 851
- [See all posts](#)

I agree with JN's original post, completely. I do not know of any women at work in the 18 - 49 age group who are fans of the show. I do not any young people who conduct their romantic lives the way Caskett is depicted. For someone who says they want to do things in an organic way, this has now become the least organic TV show on any network.

Opmerking [S306]: Kritiek makers

~~Sadly, I can't even get worked up enough to write a longer post. As the Righteous Brothers once said, I've lost that loving feeling. I just can't get worked up about the show. Let's be honest. As a procedural, it is not that good. As a comedy, it is not that good. It is a hybrid that is supposedly driven by the relationship angle. Only, as JN, Mig and others point out, there IS NO RELATIONSHIP! AWM says their secret is they already are in a relationship. When your mother refers to another person in your life as your better half, you are in a relationship. But we do not see any evidence of it besides the looks, innuendos and comments by other characters. I have no idea where the show goes from here, and right now, I no longer care.~~

Opmerking [S307]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Feb 22, 18:17

- [Usagi_yo](#)
- **Member since:** May 4, 2011
- **Posts:** 382
- [See all posts](#)

Over the summer, I got my 21 year old son hooked on castle by rewatching season one. After we parted, he finished up season 2 and season 3. Sometime in mid Dec, my son asked me, "Why did they change Castle" so much.

Opmerking [S308]: Persoonlijke informatie delen

Feb 22, 18:22

- [jnorton45](#)
- **Member since:** Aug 22, 2009

- ~~Posts: 1132~~
- ~~[See all posts](#)~~

Usagi_yo said...

~~Over the summer, I got my 21-year old son hooked on castle by rewatching season one. After we parted, he finished up season 2 and season 3. Sometime in mid Dec, my son asked me, "Why did they change Castle" so much.~~

~~Yes, they jumped the shark and never realized it. Amazing.~~

Feb 22, 20:31

- [lala4castle](#)
- **Member since:** May 25, 2010
- **Posts:** 845
- [See all posts](#)

~~Le sigh. Add me to the list of those who agree with jnorton and Mig. I'm so bummed about the direction the show has taken. The fun, exciting, and yes, often titillating show I once enjoyed so much is now bordering on tedious for me. It makes me sad. Hell, at this point I'm so desperate for a change that I'd be happy if they pulled a "Dallas" and Season 4 was all a dream Beckett had while in a coma after being shot. At least then I could hope that when she wakes up we'd get a "do-over" and things would improve.~~

Opmerking [S309]: Kritiek makers

Opmerking [S310]: Fantasie

~~It will be interesting to see what happens at Paley Fest. I really wish someone would have the nerve to ask Andrew Marlowe (and others) some "tough" questions. The problem is, the first set of Q&A's are with the Moderator and by the end of that session everyone in the audience is smitten with the cast and crew after seeing how kind and personable they are, especially when they're interacting with the fans. So when it's time for the audience to ask questions, I don't think anyone wants to get up and stir the pot - i.e., make anyone feel bad or uncomfortable. I could be wrong, but I bet that's the way it will go. Which is too bad, because seriously, we need to know WTF is going on. I, for one, would love to ask NF how he feels about his character these days. I'd like to ask him if he's as sad as I am that they've sucked all the FUN out of *Richard Castle*, or if he's as frustrated as I am that Rick hasn't had sex in over a year? But, of course, I know I'd never be able to do it. *::wimpy grin::* Mig, we need **you** to attend so someone can ask the tough questions!!~~

Opmerking [S311]: Fandom en kritiek makers

- ~~[MigalouchUD](#)~~
- ~~**Member since:** Mar 23, 2010~~
- ~~**Posts:** 3276~~
- ~~[See all posts](#)~~

jn1414 said...

~~Sadly, I must agree with JNortos45's very astute post. I say sadly because his post points out a mistake by TPTB that could doom my favorite show. I have college age daughters and they've lost their interest in Castle for exactly the reasons JNorton points out. Even my wife, who is not in that 18-49 demographic has given up the show, she says its "boring now". I fear that AM's purpose now is to kill Caskett, (Sophia's speech), not move it forward. He seems to think consummating the relationship will kill the show (Moonlighting curse) so his only alternative is to kill the relationship, have C&B move on, and then refocus the shows on the cases. It won't work, the show will fail and will be cancelled and that would make me sad as I~~

really do enjoy all of the characters and so much of the writing etc.— I am still grasping at the hope that Beckett's comment about "Sophia told a lot of lies" really does mean that she did not take Sophia's speech to heart but it just doesn't feel that way to me. I sure hope that I am 100% wrong about all this but I guess we'll just have to wait and see

Ironically its AM's fear of the Moonlighting curse that is in reality killing the show, and not the curse that he so vehemently is trying to avoid—

-

Feb 22, 16:41

- [LoveMysteryC](#)
- **Member since:** May 28, 2011
- **Posts:** 228
- [See all posts](#)

rugbyreff said...

That's some pretty interesting evidence to back up your argument!!

Anyway, I do agree, and what you say makes a lot of sense. The ultimate way for the ratings to come back is for there to be a hook up of some kind, but the message I kind of got—and a lot of others picked up on—was that AM was trying to use Sofia to prove a point about what getting together can do to a relationship. That it can ruin the spark if C&B get together like Sofia and Castle did back in the day.

But I am 100% sure that AM and co can write a better relationship than this so-called moonlighting curse. But time is running short, and I think between now and the end of the season is the best opportunity to use that power up and get the ratings up before the end of the season

Jeff, that part of the episode was put in to give us the "Oh No's" and it apparently worked. But at the end, Beckett didn't buy what Sophia was selling. She knew it was all a lie and that her relationship with Rick would be different. He told her so.

Feb 22, 17:02

- [wesleyg7](#)
- **Member since:** Oct 6, 2011
- **Posts:** 734
- [See all posts](#)

LoveMysteryC said...

rugbyreff said...

That's some pretty interesting evidence to back up your argument!!

Anyway, I do agree, and what you say makes a lot of sense. The ultimate way for the ratings to come back is for there to be a hook up of some kind, but the message I kind of got—and a lot of others picked up on—was that AM was trying to use Sofia to prove a point about what getting together can do to a relationship. That it can ruin the spark if C&B get together like

~~Sofia and Castle did back in the day.~~

~~But I am 100% sure that AM and co can write a better relationship than this so-called moonlighting curse. But time is running short, and I think between now and the end of the season is the best opportunity to use that power up and get the ratings up before the end of the season~~

~~*****~~

~~Jeff, that part of the episode was put in to give us the "Oh No's" and it apparently worked. But at the end, Beckett didn't buy what Sophia was selling. She knew it was all a lie and that her relationship with Rick would be different. He told her so.~~

~~I agree but I'm getting bored with them doing so only in subtext so the characters themselves can keep avoiding the actual subject. That's what leaves it to interpretation and it shouldn't.~~

Feb 22, 20:51

- [halaci](#)
- **Member since:** May 9, 2010
- **Posts:** 327
- [See all posts](#)

~~lala4castle said...~~

~~Le sigh. Add me to the list of those who agree with jnorton and Mig. I'm so bummed about the direction the show has taken. The fun, exciting, and yes, often titillating show I once enjoyed so much is now bordering on tedious for me. It makes me sad. Hell, at this point I'm so desperate for a change that I'd be happy if they pulled a "Dallas" and Season 4 was all a dream Beckett had while in a coma after being shot. At least then I could hope that when she wakes up we'd get a "do-over" and things would improve.~~

~~It will be interesting to see what happens at Paley Fest. I really wish someone would have the nerve to ask Andrew Marlowe (and others) some "tough" questions. The problem is, the first set of Q&A's are with the Moderator and by the end of that session everyone in the audience is smitten with the cast and crew after seeing how kind and personable they are, especially when they're interacting with the fans. So when it's time for the audience to ask questions, I don't think anyone wants to get up and stir the pot - i.e., make anyone feel bad or uncomfortable. I could be wrong, but I bet that's the way it will go. Which is too bad, because seriously, we need to know WTF is going on. I, for one, would love to ask NF how he feels about his character these days. I'd like to ask him if he's as sad as I am that they've sucked all the FUN out of *Richard Castle*, or if he's as frustrated as I am that Rick hasn't had sex in over a year? But, of course, I know I'd never be able to do it. ::wimpy grin:: Mig, we need *you* to attend so someone can ask the tough questions!!~~

~~Well, I criticize the writers a great many times, but honestly, if I were there, I probably wouldn't crash the event, because on the other hand it's the cast - with Stana in the first place,~~

but practically all of them - which makes me switch to the show after these episodes. It's their event too and they are the very last to be blamed for a failure. So while in an interview with AM I would probably ask until he dumps the table on me, here I would not ruin their moments - not that I could have a chance. (Though, I don't know. I can't stand hypocrisy. So if AM tells how greatly we love to be frustrated, maybe I would change my mind, the hell with everything.)

Opmerking [S312]: Fandom

Feb 22, 22:51

- [MigalouchUD](#)
- **Member since:** Mar 23, 2010
- **Posts:** 3276
- [See all posts](#)

halaci said...

lala4castle said...

~~Le sigh. Add me to the list of those who agree with jnorton and Mig. I'm so bummed about the direction the show has taken. The fun, exciting, and yes, often titillating show I once enjoyed so much is now bordering on tedious for me. It makes me sad. Hell, at this point I'm so desperate for a change that I'd be happy if they pulled a "Dallas" and Season 4 was all a dream Beckett had while in a coma after being shot. At least then I could hope that when she wakes up we'd get a "do-over" and things would improve.~~

~~It will be interesting to see what happens at Paley Fest. I really wish someone would have the nerve to ask Andrew Marlowe (and others) some "tough" questions. The problem is, the first set of Q&A's are with the Moderator and by the end of that session everyone in the audience is smitten with the cast and crew after seeing how kind and personable they are, especially when they're interacting with the fans. So when it's time for the audience to ask questions, I don't think anyone wants to get up and stir the pot - i.e., make anyone feel bad or uncomfortable. I could be wrong, but I bet that's the way it will go. Which is too bad, because seriously, we need to know WTF is going on. I, for one, would love to ask NF how he feels about his character these days. I'd like to ask him if he's as sad as I am that they've sucked all the FUN out of *Richard Castle*, or if he's as frustrated as I am that Rick hasn't had sex in over a year? But, of course, I know I'd never be able to do it. ::wimpy grin:: Mig, we need **you** to attend so someone can ask the tough questions!!~~

-

~~Well, I criticise the writers a great many times, but honestly, if I were there, I probably wouldn't crash the event, because on the other hand it's the cast - with Stana in the first place, but practically all of them - which makes me switch to the show after these episodes. It's their event too and they are the very last to be blamed for a failure. So while in an interview with AM I would probably ask until he dumps the table on me, here I would not ruin their moments - not that I could have a chance. (Though, I don't know. I can't stand hypocrisy. So if AM tells how greatly we love to be frustrated, maybe I would change my mind, the hell with everything.)~~

Lol I would do it heartbeat its all in how you word it. Like asking NF how he feels about his character these days and how it seems the fun has been sucked out of him turns instead to "This question is for Nathan, can you go into detail of how you feel about the evolution of your character from this wild partying done it all playboy to a more reserved father figure that seems to have left the more edgy exciting life behind in order to concentrate on being in the precinct with Beckett and solving crimes more? Also as a follow up on this evolution what season of Castle was the character Richard Castle the most fun or challenging for you as an actor and why?"

Whamo didn't insult him nor did I overtly tell him his character is boring. The implication is there, if you are looking for it and know what my intention is, but he may all of the sudden start talking about it and go "wait wtf my character has gotten lame" all on his own.

Opmerking [S313]: Fandom

Andrew Marlowe though I would be more blunt with because I respect NF, SK, and the cast a whole lot more. For AM my question would be more along the lines of something close to "A large part of the community of Castle feels like the show has slowed down due to the relationship between the leads not really happening, to many episodes that simply don't seem to matter the next week, storylines that are almost forgotten until an episode a season later deals with them such as 3XK, and to much concentration on cases that have become very routine and "cookie cutter." What are your plans to change the show in some way to appease these fan beliefs as well as bring ratings back up to their highest levels by enticing viewers to return to the show after they have abanonded it due to lack of interest?"

Opmerking [S314]: Kritiek makers

~~Definitely more of a butthead on that one, but blunt with him seems like the best option or he will try and sidestep what you really asked.~~

For SK I would probably ask her how she feels that a portion of the fanbase has a negative opinion of her character and why she thinks her character has never uttered the words I'm Sorry to Castle. I would also make that sound very polite as well to get her to think, but not look like I am trying to go after her.

Opmerking [S315]: Fandom

~~Point is tough questions worded the right way lose their sting, but still ask what you want. I would ask my questions to the majority that way. To AM I feel you need to be a bit more blunt or he will try and sidestep your question because he doesn't want to answer it.~~

Feb 22, 23:24

- [Kelly641980](#)
- **Member since:** Sep 3, 2011
- **Posts:** 2390
- [See all posts](#)

Geez Mig, who knew you could be so diplomatic when you needed to be????

Feb 22, 23:54

- [Caskett12](#)
- **Member since:** Mar 24, 2011
- **Posts:** 955

- [See all posts](#)

I am one of the younger Castle viewers and I have got to say that I am not at all bored with Caskett. I want Caskett together as much as the next person but I am not going to dwell on it every single episode left of Season 4. If and when Castle and Beckett get together I want them to be committed to one another. I want Castle and Beckett to be open with one another. I am young and naive and don't have the strongest thoughts when it comes to Caskett. I think that the younger viewers are content with where Caskett is at this point. How can Beckett and Castle move forward when they have two secrets out there? Their secrets have to come out, bottom line.

Feb 23, 2:26

- [the_pseudokings](#)
- **Member since:** Jan 19, 2014
- **Posts:** 387
- [See all posts](#)

Post #12 is missing in this thread, it was mine. That's 2 posts killed by the mods in about 2 days. You'd really think that the banned words list would be enough for them, but it seems not.

Feb 23, 19:56

- [lala4castle](#)
- **Member since:** May 25, 2010
- **Posts:** 845
- [See all posts](#)

MigalouchUD said...

LoI I would do it heartbeat its all in how you word it. Like asking NF how he feels about his character these days and how it seems the fun has been sucked out of him turns instead to "This question is for Nathan, can you go into detail of how you feel about the evolution of your character from this wild partying done it all playboy to a more reserved father figure that seems to have left the more edgy exciting life behind in order to concentrate on being in the precinct with Beckett and solving crimes more?" Also as a follow up on this evolution what season of Castle was the character Richard Castle the most fun or challenging for you as an actor and why?"

Whamo didn't insult him nor did I overtly tell him his character is boring. The implication is there, if you are looking for it and know what my intention is, but he may all of the sudden start talking about it and go "wait wtf my character has gotten lame" all on his own.

Ahh, Mig, you are quite the cunning linguist. (Please read that carefully — I am *not* trying to be dirrrty, I swear!) You're absolutely right — it's not so much what you say, but how you say it. Hey, if AM can use superfluous subtext, we can too, right?!? Heh. I'll give your suggestion some serious thought and maybe I'll get up the nerve to try and ask a question.

Opmerking [S316]: Wensen en begrijpen van de gevoelens van de karakters

Opmerking [S317]: Fandom

Feb 23, 20:21

- [purpl_angel](#)
- **Member since:** Jan 25, 2011
- **Posts:** 21
- [See all posts](#)

I agree with pretty much everything that's been said on this post... I love Castle period. I think it's the BEST tv show out there today and has been for the past 4 years, BUT this waiting for the inevitable is utterly frustrating!! Castle has now lost the interest of my husband.

Even he says how ridiculous and how unnatural it is that Kate/Rick haven't consummated their relationship by now. These 2 are both consenting, ADULTS who are obviously attracted to one another, (Chemistry is completely off-the-charts btw) both with needs and neither one is in a relationship right now ... With all the sacrifices Rick has done for Kate, it should've happened way before now.

This tiptoeing around Marlowe does on a weekly basis is pretty much embarrassing at this point.

Castle's lost my hubby and I'm about ready to jump ship as well. Come on, Marlowe, we need some breadcrumbs!! PL -- EEE-- ase

Opmerking [S318]: Persoonlijke informatie delen en niet begrijpen van de gevoelens

Opmerking [S319]: Kritiek en advies makers

Feb 23, 21:41

- [MigalouchUD](#)
- **Member since:** Mar 23, 2010
- **Posts:** 3276
- [See all posts](#)

lala4castle said...

MigalouchUD said...

Lol I would do it heartbeat its all in how you word it. Like asking NF how he feels about his character these days and how it seems the fun has been sucked out of him turns instead to "This question is for Nathan, can you go into detail of how you feel about the evolution of your character from this wild partying done it all playboy to a more reserved father figure that seems to have left the more edgy exciting life behind in order to concentrate on being in the precinct with Beckett and solving crimes more? Also as a follow up on this evolution what season of Castle was the character Richard Castle the most fun or challenging for you as an actor and why?"

Whamo didn't insult him nor did I overtly tell him his character is boring. The implication is there, if you are looking for it and know what my intention is, but he may all of the sudden start talking about it and go "wait wtf my character has gotten lame" all on his own.

Ahh, Mig, you are quite the cunning linguist. (Please read that carefully I am *not* trying to be dirrrrry, I swear!) You're absolutely right it's not so much what you say, but how you

~~say it. Hey, if AM can use superfluous subtext, we can too, right?!? Heh. I'll give your suggestion some serious thought and maybe I'll get up the nerve to try and ask a question.~~

Exactly it isn't a mean question at all either, but rather a valid one. I think one of the large problems is that no one actually questions AM and co to their faces. Sure we say it here, but we all know they don't listen to a thing we say here. Someone has to dish out tough Qs, interviewers surely don't, because the show is in trouble and we are all very concerned.

I have always said I would love to sit down and talk to AM at length about the show and get his opinion of things that I'm not sure he even knows about, like Beckett and the boys HUGE mistake with the Montgomery coverup and it being illegal.

Opmerking [S320]: Kritiek makers

Sadly he hasn't contacted me yet even though he can get my info through ABC's site.

Opmerking [S321]: Fandom

Feb 25, 4:24

- [CastleBones](#)
- **Member since:** Dec 6, 2011
- **Posts:** 4
- [See all posts](#)

I agree! in season 3 Kate & Castle used to go out to dinner now nothing. what happened kate stopped having a life after work.. castle was telling a story from a PI diary the blue butterfly was trying see kate's re-action, he was trying to judge her feelings towards him, but he did not get the response he was looking for. I don't believe a man will wait for ever unless given some incentive, she hasn't showed any interest in him season 4, no hug, no touch, she never shares her feelings, maybe she can say she loves him but that she has to take the relationship slow, until she can overcome her inner demons first before she can move forward with the relationship. All that I ask is that you be patient with me she can say to rick. why hasn't kate asked rick come over for dinner? I am surprised that captain gates doesn't have castle take psych evaluation after almost drowned almost shot in the head that he is safe to be with the team. chances are he has studied some form of criminal psychology for his writing career, so he would know what to say to pass the psych eval anyway. I think rick is waiting for kate to make the first move. he has hinted his feelings now its up to kate..

Opmerking [S322]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S323]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter en fantasie

<p>7:09 am October 9, 2010</p>	
<p>dmew Illinois  Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 3304</p>	<p>I am just in the middle of chapter 8 right now, but I am enjoying it so much. Chapter 8 - Reveal Spoiler</p> <p>I just loved the interaction and discussion between Heat and Rook that started the chapter. It was so honest and "adult" and so unlike the evasiveness and hiding behind snark and humor that we get from Castle and Beckett on the show. I also really enjoyed the back-and-forth among Raley, Ochoa, and Heat the morning after Heat was attacked in which they were all hiding their feelings behind jibes at each other.</p>
<p>7:17 am October 9, 2010</p>	
<p>PeTJa GaGa  Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 587</p>	<p>I've just read the book and loved it! :D</p>
<p>9:48 am October 9, 2010</p>	
<p>nalissa2  Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1183</p>	<p>PeTJa said: I've just read the book and loved it! :D Reveal Spoiler Finding out about Victoria St. Clair was just as hilarious for me as it was for Nikki. 😊 I wonder if Richard Castle's got the same secret as Rook had had it until Nikki figured it out. :)</p>
<p>11:38 am October 9, 2010</p>	<p>OFFLINE </p>

Opmerking [S324]: Waardeoordeel

Opmerking [S325]: waardeoordeel

<p>musiclover</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1480</p>	<p>I finished chapter 10 Thursday and</p> <p>Reveal Spoiler</p>
<p>6:51 pm October 10, 2010</p> <p>unniw Norway</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1724</p>	<p>I wonder if Beckett has read it yet, and whether we'll see her reaction to Naked Heat in the show. I would like to see it mentioned, at least. I liked this one so much better than Heat Wave! It's clear that "Castle" had more "research" to draw on now, compared to last year.</p> <p>Reveal Spoiler</p> <p>If I was Beckett I would wonder just how much of himself Castle is putting into Rook. Because Rook is totally jealous of Heat's old boyfriend, so even if Beckett can't see it directly from Castle, she could read it here... It's like a love letter to her. 🤔 But I guess Beckett will just repeat her mantra: It's fiction! 😞</p> <p>Defective Schlemming. Bad Castle! Bad bad Castle! 😞</p> <p>I wish I knew how to quit you.</p>
<p>8:58 pm October 10, 2010</p> <p>Nev827</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 3279</p>	<p>I finished the book the day after I got it in the mail from amazon. And I liked it a lot more than Heat Wave, though the sex scene in Naked Heat wasn't as good as page 105, IMHO. Still, it was quite an achievement to draw in all the threads from the various cases Castle & Beckett worked last year and still make the case plausible.</p> <p>Reveal Spoiler</p> <p>Can't wait to see Beckett's reaction to the book.</p> <p>"Make you a deal," she said. "I'll watch my ass, you watch the crowd." -Nikki Heat in <i>Heat Wave</i> Avatar by SKB</p>
<p>5:14 pm December 26, 2010</p> <p>molly_littlecastle Southeast USA</p> 	<p>Well I just read it, 'cause I got it for Christmas yesterday and I'm a big reader so I started yesterday and finished it a couple of minutes ago.</p> <p>Is it just me or were some of the pages misplaced in the book? Some of them were double printed in my book. Hopefully I'm not the only one who had this problem.</p> <p>Wow. I was surprised that they put more than one scene from multiple</p>

Opmerking [S326]: Begrijpen gevoelens van een karakter

<p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 489</p> 	<p>'Castle' episodes in the book too: - Reveal Spoiler The missing body from "deep in death"; from "the third man" scream from Castle; Rook (& Nikki) duct taped to the chair from "a rose for everafter" beginning; the baseball star from "suicide squeeze"; the musician/dancer (<i>who killed herself on the train tracks</i>) reminded me of haley blue from "famous last words" and who can forget the beginning of the book: when Rook comes back from a long summer without talking to Heat for three months. like the beginning of "a deadly affair", which also happened when Rook was in the same house as the dead body at the start of the book. :) And who can forget the upcoming romane with Janie/esposito, that was a interesting read.</p> <p>Overall it was a good book, it felt like I was watching Castle all over again. :)</p>
<p>12:34 am May 19, 2011</p> <p>jackieh90</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 96</p>	<p>Just got it from the library and am only a few chapters in but can't wait to read more of it</p>
<p>3:07 pm May 20, 2011</p> <p>melody3173</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 111</p>	<p>absolutely love the book. it is even better than heat wave I think. he knows he loves her, she knows she loves him, he knows she loves him, she knows he loves her, but they don't know that we know that they know that we know.</p>
<p>12:30 pm June 20, 2011</p>	<p>Just finished reading Naked Heat after re-watching season 2</p>

CastleChica
Ann Arbor, MI



Castle Groupie

posts 8



and absolutely loved it. ——— Definitely flowed better than Heat Wave, making it a great read. For me, the books kind of fill in the gaps for a lot of things that I wish the show had.

[Reveal Spoiler](#)

Or how there is never any mention of them having to maneuver through traffic in NYC on the show (very unrealistic), but that we read a lot about it in the books. Little things like that make it all seem more viable to me. I wonder if that's one of the book's true intentions? Something else I've noticed...

[Reveal Spoiler](#)

That sounds really obvious after I say it but if we are supposed to believe that the books are written from Castle's point of view, and what we read in them are the bases for what he wants to happen between him and Beckett (relationship wise), then I hope we see more of that in season 4 if TPTB actually wants to develop a true relationship between them. Beckett can say the books are fiction all she wants, but I agree that for Castle there is more truth behind his words than she lets herself believe.

Castle: "You know what I thought when I first met you? That you were a mystery I was never going to solve. Even now, after spending all this time with you, I'm still amazed at the depths of your strength, your heart... and your hotness."

Beckett: "You're not so bad yourself, Castle."
~ Season 3, Episode 22. *To Love and Die in L.A.* ~
[Icon by [annaxbanana](#)]

Opmerking [S327]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van de karakters

6:57 am
August 18, 2011

oznute
Australia



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 260

For the Firefly fans — I'm rereading *Naked Heat* at the moment. In Chapter 9, around page 128 (epub style so pages might be off a bit), is this line — I had a good chuckle:
Nikki Heat says — "I also want a team to work the Dragonfly. Malcolm, you and...how about Reynolds from Vice?"
A few paragraphs later: Heat didn't like to Bigfoot Malcolm and Reynolds.....

4:40 pm
August 18, 2011

Nev827

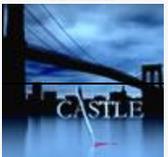
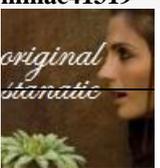


oznute said:

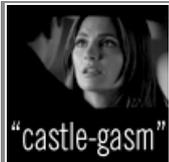
For the Firefly fans — I'm rereading *Naked Heat* at the moment. In Chapter 9, around page 128 (epub style so pages might be off a bit), is this line — I had a good chuckle:
Nikki Heat says — "I also want a team to work the Dragonfly. Malcolm, you and...how about Reynolds from Vice?"

<p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 3279</p>	<p>A few paragraphs later: Heat didn't like to Bigfoot Malcolm and Reynolds.....</p> <p>I picked up on that when I read the book too!— —Loved it!</p> <p><i>"Make you a deal," she said. "I'll watch my ass, you watch the crowd."</i> —Nikki Heat in <i>Heat Wave</i> Avatar by SKB</p>
<p>3:03 pm August 28, 2011</p> <p>mb France</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 79</p>	<p>I'm currently reading the book. The first thing I noticed is the dedication: once more it's to Beckett even if he doesn't say it clearly.. I remember that he only dedicates his books to people he really cares about.. I can't remember if he dedicates more than one of his books to the same</p>

Opmerking [S328]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

<p>2:13 pm September 29, 2009</p> <p>Admin</p>  <p>Admin posts 3936</p> 	<p>If you've got the book and read it you can discuss it with spoilers here, please keep other threads limited to discussion on the episodes released via the web.</p> <p>Thanks</p> <p>Site Administrator</p>
<p>2:35 pm September 29, 2009</p> <p>lilmae41319</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie</p>	<p>I've got the book but haven't started reading it just yet. I gotta finish my homework first but I plan on reading it tonight lol.</p>

posts 887	
<p>4:32 pm October 1, 2009</p> <p>Boston Scientist</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 498</p>	<p>During all the years I spent in Tarrytown, NY, we never hung out at the Sleepy Swallow, but the name is hilarious given the location. 😊</p> <p>T R o U B L e M a K e R</p>
<p>4:42 pm October 1, 2009</p> <p>nalissa2</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1183</p>	<p>OFFLINE</p> <p>Print this Post</p> <p>4</p> <p>0</p> <p>★ ★ ★ ★ ★</p> <p>I just got mine today. It's really short! I thought it was going to be longer... oh well. I'll whip it out on t he subway and hopefully "advetise" the book. 😊</p> <p>NYPD- Open the damn door!</p>
<p>8:13 pm October 1, 2009</p> <p>ilmac11319</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 887</p>	<p>Can I just say that I absolutely loved chapter 10? I feel like that was a good bone the producers threw us since we know Caskett won't be in exsistance for a while on the show.</p>
<p>12:57 am October 2, 2009</p> <p>ashley_slomo</p>	<p>ilmac11313 said:Can I just say that I absolutely loved chapter 10? I feel like that was a good bone the producers threw us since we know Caskett won't be in exsistance for a while on the show.</p>



"castle-gasm"
 Hard Core Castle
 Groupie
 posts 418



Chapter 10 *totally* shocked the hell out of me, but I guess that's why Castle said Heat would be "a little slutty"... 😊 Definitely lives up to the title, lol. That's for sure.

I heard in some interview (can't remember where, maybe someone else knows?) that the book will be referenced— even by page number in some places— throughout the next couple of eps... Wonder if Beckett will bring it up? Kind of hard to miss that chapter if she's supposed to have read it and all... Should an interesting convo between her and Castle if she does, since apparently he thought about *it*... in great detail... lmao. Can't even imagine what Ryan & Esposito will have to

say about it if they read it, too! 😊

Overall, I was actually really surprised at how good this was! I was pretty glued to it for most of yesterday and actually finished it today. Which is weird for me, because I haven't picked up a book so gripping in a while. Can't tell if it's because it was well-written (it was pretty good, esp. for a TV tie-in), or because I freaking love this show and would probably have bought a dictionary with a Heat Wave dustjacket. 😊

Opmerking [S329]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S330]: Fandom

6:19 am
 October 2, 2009

lilmac41319



Hard Core Castle
 Groupie
 posts 887

ashley_slomo said:

lilmac41313 said: Can I just say that I absolutely loved chapter 10? I feel like that was a good bone the producers threw us since we know Caskett won't be in exsistance for a while on the show.

Chapter 10 *totally* shocked the hell out of me, but I guess that's why Castle said Heat would be "a little slutty"... 😊 Definitely lives up to the title, lol. That's for sure.

I heard in some interview (can't remember where, maybe someone else knows?) that the book will be referenced— even by page number in some places— throughout the next couple of eps... Wonder if Beckett will bring it up? Kind of hard to miss that chapter if she's supposed to have read it and all... Should an interesting convo between her and Castle if she does, since apparently he thought about *it*... in great detail... lmao. Can't even imagine what Ryan & Esposito

will have to say about it if they read it, too! 😊

Overall, I was actually really surprised at how good this was! I was pretty glued to it for most of yesterday and actually finished it today. Which is weird for me, because I haven't picked up a book so gripping in a while. Can't tell if it's because it was well-written (it was pretty good, esp. for a TV

tie-in), or because I freaking love this show and would probably have bought a dictionary with a Heat Wave dustjacket. 😊

Lol I think that they'll be mentioning it in the episode that has the Heat Wave launch party. I can't wait to see how they have Beckett react. Ironically Stana's reaction is going to be genuine because she hasn't been aloud to read the book yet 🤔 It's going to be amazing to see them play out the reactions to that chapter 😊

Opmerking [S331]: Fandom

7:06 am
October 2, 2009

m_hanh



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 666

hilmac11313 said:

Lol I think that they'll be mentioning it in the episode that has the Heat Wave launch party. I can't wait to see how they have Beckett react. Ironically Stana's reaction is going to be genuine because she hasn't been aloud to read the book yet 🤔 It's going to be amazing to see them play out the reactions to that chapter 😊

That's a great trick, not allowing her to read the book before the scene.

Do we know which episode the launch party will be in? 🤔

Regarding the book, I actually liked it alot, I was a little worried at first, there were some missteps in the first couple of chapters and they still didn't correct all the typos and mistakes, but given the shortened time period for the assembly of this book, I think its pretty good. I think that reading one chapter at a time, while a good marketing tool, has disadvantages too. I hardly ever read just one chapter when I'm reading a book, so if one chapter isn't so good, by the time you read onto the next chapter, I tend to forgot that chapter that was lacking and certainly don't have a week to ponder over it.

I liked that "Castle" wrote it as Heat/aka Beckett almost always being a step ahead of Rook in the investigations, and I don't think Beckett will have much to complain about as far as her portrayal as a very savvy, very capable detective. However, chapter 10 will really rile her up, can't wait to see that! Can't wait for the teasing she'll get from Esposito and Ryan! (and Lanie!)

Opmerking [S332]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

8:11 am

<p>October 2, 2009</p>	<p>No doubt, they will reference page 108 and 'wake up calls' on the show. It will be hilarious! 😄 Can't wait to see everyone's reaction to the book, especially Beckett's.</p>	<p>Opmerking [S333]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid</p>
<p>Boston Scientist</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 498</p>	<p>TROUBLE MAKER</p>	
<p>5:06 pm October 2, 2009</p>	<p>I finished the book tonight and just loved it. I caught "spilt" instead of "split" and iPhone "ap" instead of "app" (wow, would that make Nathan cringe!), but I didn't notice as many mistakes as were on the ABC site (which was an early version anyway, I guess). That is fascinating Stana hasn't been allowed to read the book yet. I can't wait to see Kate Beckett's reaction to Ch. 9-10. I really got into the book (stayed up till 2:30 a.m. earlier this week reading... would have finished the book if I didn't have work the next day!), and the writer did an awesome job with the descriptions... really felt like I was watching an episode of Castle. I so hope they do more of these books (fingers crossed).</p>	<p>Opmerking [S334]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid</p> <p>Opmerking [S335]: Waardeoordeel</p>
<p>castlecat</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 63</p>		
<p>5:12 pm October 2, 2009</p>	<p>im loving it im on chapter 17 so far</p>	
<p>Thecastlefan</p>  <p>Guest</p>		
<p>5:40 pm October 2, 2009</p>	<p>castlecat said: I so hope they do more of these books (fingers crossed).</p> <p>I kind of hope that maybe they'll release a Derrick Storm book or Hell Hath No Fury for the Hard Core Castle groupies 🍷</p>	<p>Opmerking [S336]: Fandom</p>
<p>lilmac41319</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie</p>		

posts 887	
<p>1:26 pm October 6, 2009</p> <p>nalissa2</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1183</p>	<p>Finished it last night. I actually like it a lot. For a rush job, which I think it is, it's very entertaining. It's actually gotten cheaper at amazon too. I might pick up a few copies to give as gifts this Xmas.</p> <p>NYPD- Open the damn door!</p>
<p>2:06 pm October 6, 2009</p> <p>SydneyDeb</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 938</p>  	<p>Hey all, I got both my book and DVDs last night 😊</p> <p>I rewatched the first two eps, ohhh I really love that scruffy look Riek has going on, sexy and started the book on the bus this morning. I'm up to chapter 3 and loving it. I hope they put more out.</p> <p>Does anyone else automatically read them as the 'real' people and not who they are in the book LOL I've been doing it all morning. Loving Rook already, he's so going to give Nikki hell LOL</p> <p>Let me tell you something about crazy people. The sex is unbelievable.</p>
<p>2:56 pm October 6, 2009</p> <p>KalliopePL Warsaw, Poland</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1924</p> 	<p>Still waiting for my copy of "Heat wave" to arrive. Amazon.com shipped it on September 25th, so I hope it's gonna be here within the next 2-3 days.</p>
<p>3:03 pm October 6, 2009</p>	

Opmerking [S337]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

<p>ashley_slomo</p>  <p>"castle-gasm"</p> <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 418</p> 	<p>SydneyDeb said: Does anyone else automatically read them as the 'real' people and not who they are in the book LOL I've been doing it all morning. Loving Rook already, he's so going to give Nikki hell LOL</p> <hr/> <p>Yep, I did ;) Just had to remember, Heat = Beckett, Rook = Castle, Ochoa = Esposito, and Raley = Ryan :P "Richard Castle" didn't give a whole lot of physical description of the characters, so I kind of think we were supposed to to that... Not that it matters, I probably would've done it anyway. 😊 Anyone else laugh at the mention of the "Bree Flax" character? Thought it was funny that they included her even though she was only in that one episode.</p>
<p>3:54 pm October 6, 2009</p> <p>GreenyJess</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 292</p>	<p>I definitely did that, too. Pretty obviously supposed to, I think. Very thinly veiled name changes all the way around. Captain Montrose = Captain Montgomery Lauren Parry = Lanie Parish Margaret = Martha Subtle. Real subtle. Hee. Oh, I loved the Bree Flax thing. Especially since that chapter went online the same night they re-aired Ghosts. Of course, he had to include her after the line about "One day I'll use this in a book." The little tie-ins are so much fun!</p>
<p>3:56 pm October 6, 2009</p> <p>SydneyDeb</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 938</p>  	<p>I so love the pic of Rick on the back dust jacket too, really nice pic ;)</p>
<p>5:16 pm October 6, 2009</p> <p>nalissa2</p>	<p>SydneyDeb said: Does anyone else automatically read them as the 'real' people and not who they are in the book</p>

Opmerking [S338]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S339]: Waardeoordeel en verwarring werkelijkheid



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 1183

Actually I don't.
I see them almost like a Star Trek: Mirror, mirror image of
Castle and Beckett. Similar, but different. I like it that way too.

NYPD- Open the damn door!

10:27 pm
October 7, 2009

~~OFFLINE~~

ashley_slomo



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 418



Anyone else catch the dedication in the front and the
acknowledgements in the back?
I thought they were a nice touch :)

5:13 am
October 8, 2009

nalissa2



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 1183

ashley_slomo said:
Anyone else catch the dedication in the front and the
acknowledgements in the back?
I thought they were a nice touch :)

Yes, I did. I thought it was very sweet too.

NYPD- Open the damn door!

12:21 pm
October 8, 2009

hilmac41319

GreenyJess said:
I definitely did that, too. Pretty obviously supposed to, I think. Very
thinly veiled name changes all the way around.
Captain Montrose = Captain Montgomery
Laura Parry = Lenia Parich



Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 887

Margaret = Martha
Subtle. Real subtle. Hee.
Oh, I loved the Bree Flax thing. Especially since that chapter went online the same night they re-aired Ghosts. Of course, he had to include her after the line about "One day I'll use this in a book." The little tie ins are so much fun!

Don't forget about Hoarse Simpson for Judge Markoway. The actor who played him does the voice of Homer Simpson 😊
I loved the dedication in the front and the acknowledgements in the back Ashley. I thought that was really sweet. I've been trying to figure out who "Richard Castle" was in the case of writing this book and I've finally come to the conclusion that it was a group effort coming from the writing staff....

12:31 pm
October 8, 2009

ashley_slomo



Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 418



lilmae11313 said:

Don't forget about Hoarse Simpson for Judge Markoway. The actor who played him does the voice of Homer Simpson



I loved the dedication in the front and the acknowledgements in the back Ashley. I thought that was really sweet. I've been trying to figure out who "Richard Castle" was in the case of writing this book and I've finally come to the conclusion that it was a group effort coming from the writing staff....

Haha yea, I caught that! Hard to believe he does his voice, since he doesn't sound like him at all when speaking normally! I know, I kinda wanted to know too, but you're probably right... it was a collaborative effort. Either way, turned out great! Would be cool to see another one... :-)

12:39 pm
October 8, 2009

Boston Scientist



Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 498

lilmae11313 said:

I've been trying to figure out who "Richard Castle" was in the case of writing this book and I've finally come to the conclusion that it was a group effort coming from the writing staff....

Really, lilmae? I think BigSis wrote it before making dinner and late night jam sessions with her rock band. 😊

T R o U B L e
M a K e R

12:51 pm
October 8, 2009

KalliopePL
Warsaw, Poland



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 1924



My copy of "Heat wave" has arrived today 😊 I gues the KB in the dedication stands for Kate Beckett, right?

3:05 pm
October 8, 2009

ashley_slo



"castle-gasm"
Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 418



Farscapefan said: My copy of "Heat wave" has arrived today 😊 I gues the KB in the dedication stands for Kate Beckett, right?

Yeah, I think so ;)
Enjoy it! I thought it was a great read :D

3:12 pm
October 8, 2009

ashley_slo



"castle-gasm"
Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 418



★★★★★
Oh, and in reference to the whole issue with the typos, looks like "Castle" finally got his hands on a copy and is tweeting about it: (To those unfamiliar with twitter, the most recent tweet is on top, so it reads bottom to top)

Richard Castle 21 minutes ago ↵
My ex-wife/publisher decided to send my manuscript straight to print without copyediting - to punish me.

Richard Castle 53 minutes ago ↵
Lamenting over typos in Heat Wave. Just noticed a rogue question mark and sentence fragment on pg 41... Sure I got it in last minute, but...

Poor Castle :P

Opmerking [S340]: Fandom

Opmerking [S341]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

<p>3:13 pm October 8, 2009</p> <p>SydneyDeb</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 938</p> 	<p>Nice to see Nikki & Rook got it on and handled well too. I'm loving it and yer the dedications are a nice touch. I hope they do more novels too, they are loads of fun.</p> <p>Let me tell you something about crazy people. The sex is unbelievable.</p>
<p>7:41 am October 16, 2009</p> <p>Rachel J</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 22</p>	<p>Book arrived today — finished it already — awesome!!! 📦</p>
<p>4:13 am October 17, 2009</p> <p>davidsmom</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 298</p>	<p>★</p> <p>📦 Still trying to figure out how they pulled this off – using the television character who's an "author" as the actual "author" of the book! I just had a good thought, though, which I wish I'd had earlier. I do a book review column for a local newspaper in L.A. — so I wrote to Hyperion, the publisher, to see about getting a review copy of the book so I can do a column on it. Don't know if they'll send one or not – most publishers do, but we'll see in this case. Anyway, I think it would be fun to review and maybe it will help the book/show? I get a kick out of the fact that even at Hyperion's web site, and they're a serious book publisher, they go along with the idea that Richard Castle is a bestselling author, lives in Manhattan, etc. Amazing! 😞</p>
<p>3:20 pm October 17, 2009</p> <p>Silver</p>	

Opmerking [S342]: Erkenning serie

Opmerking [S343]: Waardering

Opmerking [S344]: Waardering

 <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 104</p>	<p>davidsmom said: 📖 Still trying to figure out how they pulled this off— using the television character who's an "author" as the actual "author" of the book! I just had a good thought, though, which I wish I'd had earlier. I do a book review column for a local newspaper in L.A. — so I wrote to Hyperion, the publisher, to see about getting a review copy of the book so I can do a column on it. Don't know if they'll send one or not — most publishers do, but we'll see in this case. Anyway, I think it would be fun to review and maybe it will help the book/show? I get a kick out of the fact that even at Hyperion's web site, and they're a serious book publisher, they go along with the idea that Richard Castle is a bestselling author, lives in Manhattan, etc. Amazing! 😊</p> <hr/> <p>It would be really cool if Hyerion did that and it would propbably bring more viewer to the show too. I really do love the sense of realism publishing Heat Wave has brought to the show, it's great.</p>
<p>6:52 am November 21, 2009</p> <p>PeTJa GaGa</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 587</p>	<p>Aaaaaw, I loved how RC mentioned his friends Nathan, Stana and co. in acknowledgments. 📖</p>
<p>3:12 am November 26, 2009</p> <p>Tsurwolf</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 102</p>	<p>Because I freaking love this show and would probably have bought a dictionary with a Heat Wave dustjacket. Damn — straight there girl, me to, read it in one sitting. (hehe retired so no time constraints —) yah as to the transposition of characters from TV to book, good grief who didnt, took lot's of imagination to do that right "NOT" With the writers/actors doing their respective job's so well, we should have many seasons to come, the viewer base is getting bigger every day, and i bet the networks are collecting a nice revenue stream from it.</p> <p>Cheers TBBW 😊</p> <p>My safe word is "MORE" Nobody understands me</p>

Opmerking [S345]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S346]: Waardering makers

3:02 pm
January 10, 2010

MathGuy



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 110

SydneyDeb said:

Does anyone else automatically read them as the 'real' people and not who they are in the book LOL I've been doing it all morning. Loving Rook already, he's so going to give Nikki hell LOL

ashley_slomo said:

Yep, I did

Just had to remember, Heat = Beckett, Rook = Castle, Ochoa = Esposito, and Raley = Ryan

"Richard Castle" didn't give a whole lot of physical description of the characters, so I kind of think we were supposed to to that...

Not that it matters, I probably would've done it anyway.

Anyone else laugh at the mention of the "Bree Flax" character? Thought it was funny that they included her even though she was only in that one episode.

Just a question that I've been thinking about since reading the book...

Because in Heat Wave the Raley/Ochoa detective team is abbreviated Roach,

in the tv show how about a short hand for Ryan/Esposito as Rasp ??? 😊

I'm working here until a good fast food job opens up!

7:18 pm
January 12, 2010

Actress27



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 518

MathGuy said:

Just a question that I've been thinking about since reading the book...

Because in Heat Wave the Raley/Ochoa detective team is abbreviated Roach,

in the tv show how about a short hand for Ryan/Esposito as Rasp ???



If you follow the order the characters were picked for "Roach," in place with Ryan/Esposito it would be Reysp. lol.

www.twitter.com/TheActress27

4:37 pm
February 19, 2010

Alexil

Hi guys,

I am a little too tired today so I am not going to read through the whole topic but I am just going to post my question. While



Castle Groupie
posts 23

reading Heat Wave (amazing, I have to say... I was a little skeptical in the beginning)I was wondering...
 I couldn't really stop myself from always imagining Richard Castle sitting in his office writing that book on his laptop. By the way did these lines we saw Rick write in the first episode of the first season make their way into the book? I have not found them, did anybody else maybe?
 But anyway... I was imagining Rick Castle writing the book. If he did that would mean he based the chara of Nikki Heat on Kate Beckett. And all the research he did he put in the book as well. What I was wondering about: He writes that Nikki Heat is taking the subway to work, is that fiction or does that indicate that Beckett takes the subway to work as well? There was more that I was wondering about if Rick wrote that in his book cause Beckett was doing that as well. But I can't think of anything else in the moment.
 The general question is, whether Nikkis general behavior is totally based on Kate so to say that the real author is giving us more insight on Kate Beckett with the help of the book than we have seen so far during the show. What do you think?

Opmerking [S347]: Fantasie/verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S348]: Fandom

Opmerking [S349]: Fantasie

Opmerking [S350]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

5:41 pm
February 19, 2010

dmcw
Illinois



Hard Core Castle Groupie
posts 3304

Good questions Alexil. I had the same thought about whether the lines Castle was typing in any episodes made it into the book, but I never paid enough attention to check.
 In terms of giving more insight into Beckett, I suppose it's possible, but unless the author talked to Marlowe and the writers to get additional info on backstory for that purpose, I would guess not. Although, the writers could certainly use material from Heat Wave in the future when they give more backstory on Beckett. In Rose for Everafter, Beckett tells Kyra that the book is mostly a product of Castle's overactive imagination.
 Heat Wave was fun for me. It really held my interest, and although I wasn't specifically thinking of Castle, Beckett, Ryan, Esposito, and Lanie as I was reading (I kind of enjoyed the characters in the book in their own way), I certainly got a little satisfaction out of the chapter 10 love scene in terms of imagining Castle and Beckett in that scenario. And I can't wait to see how they handle Heat and Rook's relationship in the next book. I think Nicki Heat danced the line really well in the book. She went all the way with Rook, but then put some distance between them to keep him guessing, and then took more steps back toward him at the end of the book. I could imagine a similar scenario with Beckett and Castle...

Opmerking [S351]: Fandom

Opmerking [S352]: Fantasie

Opmerking [S353]: Fantasie

3:39 am
February 20, 2010

<p>Alexil</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 23</p>	<p>What? They had a different author write the book? Is that confirmed? Wow... I didn't know that. I thought that he wrote the book and is going to write the next book as well. That's why I was wondering about all that in the first place because I thought, if one of the authors of the show wrote the book, they might have put strategic information for the fans in there. Well... but they haven't... Yes and I agree. While reading Heat Wave I was not really having the Castle Cast in mind. In fact I am of the opinion, that there are still many differences between the characters on the show and the ones in the book.</p>
<p>2:41 am January 27, 2011</p> <p>Samlis</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 6</p>	<p>Hi! I've read the book and I love it! But I can't understand something. Did Pochenko kill the appraiser first? If so, didn't he lose his ring in her car? How could his ring's prints be on Starr's body? Or did Pochenko come to Starr with Miric, beat him, then killed the appraiser and then returned to Starr to kill him? If so, does it mean that the same day two different people (Miric and Noah) hired the same person to beat or kill the same victim? And why Noah didn't sell the originals, he had two years for this! I feel myself so stupid...</p>
<p>12:14 pm June 1, 2011</p> <p>Fruit Loop Florida</p>  <p>Hard-Core-Castle Groupie posts 171</p>	<p>I just read Heat Wave and Naked Heat last week. After going back and watching some old episodes, I am LOVING all the little shout outs in the book to the show (or vice versa??). My favorite is the episode where Castle follows Beckett into the bathroom and says "It's on page 105...". The look</p>

Opmerking [S354]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

User	Post
<p>11:25 pm September 20, 2011</p> <p>dmm</p>	<p>I have read a lot of post on here about the premier and Castle and Becketts new dynamic. I have also read on other boards how they feel specifically about Beckett. Some viewers understand what beckett is going through. Others are flat out</p>

 <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 58</p>	<p>furious at Kate for how she treated castle. Let's face it the hospital scene between them the fact she didnt call him and seemed not to be concerned about not talking to him until Ryan said something about files and not to mention the ily part.I think that for some reason the writers just rolled over Kate. It seems Kate has always being judged because we all like castle and see how he loves her yet she always pushes him away. So this could have been the one time Andrew took Kate to place that people would see her pain and yet be able to understand her supporting the character. Instead he puts her in a bad light over and over. Now I liked the premier and like that castle walked away from her when he was mad at her but he caved to soon. I still like Kate as much as caslte and want them together. I just hope that we get to watch kate grow even more and she is the one showing castle how much she cares and needs him this season.</p>
<p>11:59 pm September 20, 2011</p> <p>He-Touches-Things Left Coast, Oregon</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1260</p>	<p>I'm not as bothered.</p> <p>While I, too, think Kate has treated Rick rather poorly, it rings true to my life experiences in human nature. Men, in general, try really hard to impress women that they are attracted to, while most women (especially the really attractive ones) are far more cautious about which men they let into close relationships. Rick is rather quick to drop his anger at her, but again, this rings true with my life experiences. The men I have known are quicker to move past anger, once the cause is acknowledged, while women seem to hold onto it much, much longer. Kate is finally letting Rick talk to her about those areas she has been protecting. She is not pushing him away now.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">in the Pacific Time Zone</p>
<p>12:14 am September 21, 2011</p> <p>clogue33 austin, tx</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 47</p>	<p>dmm said:</p> <p>I have read a lot of post on here about the premier and Castle and Becketts new dynamic. I have also read on other boards how they feel specifically about Beckett. Some viewers understand what beckett is going through. Others are flat out furious at Kate for how she treated castle. Let's face it the hospital scene between them the fact she didnt call him and seemed not to be concerned about not talking to him until Ryan said something about files and not to mention the ily part.I think that for some reason the writers just rolled over Kate. It seems Kate has always being judged because we all like castle and see how he loves her yet she always pushes him away. So this could have been the one time Andrew took Kate to place that people would see her pain and yet be</p>

Opmerking [S355]: Verschil begrijpen en niet begrijpen van de gevoelens karakters

Opmerking [S356]: Kritiek makers

Opmerking [S357]: Verwachting

Opmerking [S358]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S359]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S360]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

	<p>able to understand her supporting the character. Instead he puts her in a bad light over and over.</p> <p>Now I liked the premier and like that castle walked away from her when he was mad at her but he caved to soon. I still like Kate as much as caslte and want them together. I just hope that we get to watch kate grow even more and she is the one showing castle how much she cares and needs him this season.</p> <p>I, for one, find her endlessly fascinating—flaws and all. Even though I'm a man, I was raised by a single mom and can identify with a lot of her issues and the overwhelming need to get some closure. Also, her depiction in the premiere or any other episode didn't strike me as good or bad, just honest. She's in constant pain, confused and confounded by her own inability to get close to someone; she pushes everything into her job because she never felt there was someone that would be willing to persevere long enough to break down those walls. History had proven her right, until now. Going forward, my hope is to get some color and background for how she came to be this way.</p> <p>One of the main reasons this show succeeds while other's don't is that AWM and staff never pander to the audience. They have a story to tell, a love story no less, and they tell it as they wish without letting the audience or viewers dictate the pace of the relationship. What could be rushed, isn't. What could be overtly stated, isn't.</p> <p>In all seriousness, I bet Marlowe and Co. are absolutely delighted and simultaneously floored by the cult status these two have reached. Pairing marvelous and perfectly cast actors with a clear vision of their future combined with daring and courageous writing is why this show is what it is.</p>
<p>1:36 am September 21, 2011</p> <p>castle_lover45</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 169</p>	<p>That's something that was bugging me too. I get why she did what she did and that she was all conflicted and in pain and what not. That all seemed real enough but to me the thing was like, after it's all said and done, and the dust is starting to settle, if you really loved the other person back and you saw what you did to them, it seems like you'd feel pretty bad about it. Just my natural expectations of human behavior told me that if she cared as much as they're trying to tell us she does, she would have at least apologized to him later. Not like, sorry I should have been nicer and called and I'd take it all back if I could and let's get together right now, but maybe hey man, I know you were hurting too, sorry I made it worse. Like, I see it and acknowledge it sort of thing. But she never really showed any kind of regret or even</p>

Opmerking [S361]: Koppelen aan eigen leven, delen van het perspectief van een karakter.

Opmerking [S362]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

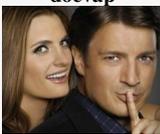
Opmerking [S363]: Wensen

Opmerking [S364]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S365]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S366]: Conflict gevoelens.

	<p>awareness of how much Castle got hurt too. I don't know, I'm still on the fence about this. But it seems like whenever he's done her wrong, consciously or not, when he finds out she's upset, he always apologizes and tries to make it right. I can't remember her ever apologizing except in last season's premiere when she said look I'm sorry about your friend but you were just in the wrong place at the wrong time. And that was just kind of a social etiquette thing. Maybe I'm just being overly sensitive and scarred from my own issues but I know I can never live with myself, knowing I hurt someone's feelings until I let them know I feel bad about it. Just seems like he's doing all the giving in this relationship and she's doing all the taking. I guess that's maybe why she's trying to work through all her crap, so she can be more giving? The way she treated him bugged me in the finale too... I don't know. I don't know if they were purposely portraying her like that or what they're trying to say. Bleh. I don't know.</p>	<p>Opmerking [S367]: Koppelen aan eigen leven en begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter</p> <p>Opmerking [S368]: Koppelen aan eigen leven en begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter</p> <p>Opmerking [S369]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter maar dit conflicteert met wat de makers laten zien.</p>
<p>7:09 am September 21, 2011</p> <p>AlwaysKate11</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 19</p>	<p>I know it's been said a hundred plus times on the boards, but I see that she is protecting her heart the only way she knows how, and she does that by keeping her distance emotionally. She's hiding those feelings even from herself. I see the talk on the swings as doing the best she can not to hurt him by at least telling him where she is coming from. She is still holding herself back, but wants him to know why at least. I am encouraged that she is recognizing this about herself. The only thing I don't like is that it puts pretty firm limits on things. Until the case about her mother is solved, that's it. He won't push until it's solved, and she will continue to use it as an excuse. If it takes too long, their relationship could fall apart. The fact that she was so emotionally distraught when she told the psychologist/psychiatrist that she remembers everything tells me that at least this is very real and important to her and that is a great start. I too though would have liked to see Castle stay mad a little longer. She needs to see her impact on him. Also I think it would have been fun watching her try to win his friendship back. I think Kate is a very complex character and although I don't always like the way she handles things with Castle, I know it's because she is emotionally not able to do better. I don't think there is anything they could have her do that would make me turn against her. Lastly, I loved the scene when she opened up to Castle about everyone being "gone". So touching. I only wish he would have given her a hug and told her that not everyone is gone. This show is killing me :)</p>	<p>Opmerking [S370]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter</p> <p>Opmerking [S371]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter</p> <p>Opmerking [S372]: Kritiek makers</p> <p>Opmerking [S373]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter</p> <p>Opmerking [S374]: Wensen</p> <p>Opmerking [S375]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter</p> <p>Opmerking [S376]: Fandom</p>

CastleFan4Ever	
<p>8:53 am September 21, 2011</p> <p>grapes</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 393</p>	<p>AlwaysKate11 said: I too though would have liked to see Castle stay mad a little longer. She needs to see her impact on him. Also I think it would have been fun watching her try to win his friendship back.</p> <p>Don't worry. Since Castle has constantly his mom and daughter reminding him of his flaws will he in return keep reminding Kate of hers. Most likely more subtle but that will make up for some great moments.</p> <p>I think Kate is a very complex character and although I don't always like the way she handles things with Castle, I know it's because she is emotionally not able to do better. I don't think there is anything they could have her do that would make me turn against her.</p> <p>Being flawed like that doesn't make her necessarily complex but gives the role more credibility. People in TV shows usually are two dimensional which makes it for the audience harder to relate to. With credible roles there is simply more room for imagination and the audience can fill in the blanks in their own way. We people here spend countless pages just doing that.</p>
<p>10:13 am September 21, 2011</p> <p>docvap</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 628</p>	<p>AlwaysKate11 said: I know it's been said a hundred plus times on the boards, but I see that she is protecting her heart the only way she knows how, and she does that by keeping her distance emotionally. She's hiding those feelings even from herself. I see the talk on the swings as doing the best she can not to hurt him by at least telling him where she is coming from. She is still holding herself back, but wants him to know why at least. I am encouraged that she is recognizing this about herself. The only thing I don't like is that it puts pretty firm limits on things. Until the case about her mother is solved, that's it. He won't push until it's solved, and she will continue to use it as an excuse. If it takes too long, their relationship could fall apart. The fact that she was so emotionally distraught when she told the psychologist/psychiatrist that she remembers everything tells me that at least this is very real and important to her and that is a great start. I too though would have liked to see Castle stay mad a little longer. She needs to see her impact on him. Also I think it would have been fun watching her try to win his friendship back. I think Kate is a very complex character and although I don't</p>

Opmerking [S377]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een van de karakters

Opmerking [S378]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S379]: Fandom

Opmerking [S380]: Fantasie

always like the way she handles things with Castle, I know it's because she is emotionally not able to do better. I don't think there is anything they could have her do that would make me turn against her.

Lastly, I loved the scene when she opened up to Castle about everyone being "gone". So touching. I only wish he would have given her a hug and told her that not everyone is gone. This show is killing me :)

I agree with this! Kate is a complex character who has come to realize that she has to get her head on straight. She knows she has to put her mother's case to rest in order to move forward and be able to completely invest herself emotionally in a relationship... especially when it is the one relationship she really wants, with Castle. I think in her taking the time away, she did a lot of soul searching and has come to understand herself and her issues very well. The fact that she acknowledges the wall that prevents her from having the kind of relationship she wants is BIG for Kate. (And the fact that she said it out loud to Castle, blew me away.) She is trying to do the right thing in order to give THEM the best shot possible at making it work in the long run. She doesn't want them to fail because of this. I am thrilled to see her character opening up more to Castle. The scene at the swings, the emotional breakdown at her apartment.. she's allowing him to see who she truly is, and there is intimacy in that. Big steps forward.

Opmerking [S381]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S382]: Emotionele reactie kijker

Opmerking [S383]: Begrijpen van het perspectief van een karakter

1:15 pm
September 21, 2011

Fitch



Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 72

To answer the question I think was asked, I think Katic hit it out of the park and into low earth orbit. That was a magnificent performance on so many levels. I was impressed on the first viewing. Subsequent watching shows just how in depth her acting was. If that wasn't an Emmy winning performance, there aren't any real Emmy winning performances.

Opmerking [S384]: Fandom

1:19 pm
September 21, 2011

little eve



Hard Core Castle

Kate is Kate and in the season premiere her actions fell largely in line with her character. She is a hider, so I was not at all surprised to find out that she had hidden from Castle (and Lanie and the boys) for most if not all of her disability time. She needed time to think. It was just as she told Castle: contact with any or all of them would not have allowed her to gain distance. Actually, I think that absence was exactly what she needed to

<p>Groupie posts 471</p>	<p>face her life again. AW stayed true to the character, and Stana was amaaaazing!</p> <p>"Just waiting for my partner. Maybe you've seen her. Pretty girl. Thinks she can leap tall buildings in a single bound, carries the weight of the world on her shoulders, yet still manages to laugh at some of my jokes." — Castle, 4x09</p>
<p>2:09 pm September 21, 2011</p>	
<p>Elainec3004</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 40</p>	<p>Personally I think it would have rung untrue if Kate had suddenly opened up more than she did – the character is naturally cautious, one assumes because of her mother's death and the men you feel she was closest to, Royce and Sorenson, somehow let her down.</p> <p>It's amazing how quickly a new lifestyle becomes the norm and that in itself then becomes very difficult to break. We know that Kate trusts Esposito, Ryan and Castle with her life, but the former clearly haven't been closely linked romantically with Beckett, so she hasn't come across someone like Castle for a hell of a long time. The fact there is probably an element of mistrust during part of the first year she and Castle were partnered because he was forced on her, he had a certain reputation and he ignored her when she specifically requested he not look into her mother's death. Then he slowly starts worming his way in, but by now she's too set in her belief that anyone she starts to truly care about beyond friendship, leaves.</p> <p>Then we get to the end of S2 and we know Beckett was going to tell Castle she would go with him to the Hamptons, a big move for her, and he leaves. Cue S3 and the barriers are firmly back in place again – it takes the season for them to slowly be broken down again, and I think we were starting to see signs, ie her saying "Always" and telling Castle more tidbits about her relationship with her mother.</p> <p>Then, the one person she trusts more than a friend, a second father figure, is the third cop who was involved in what happened to her mother. At the funeral the look she gives Castle suggests she has forgiven him, even though nothing has been said, but Castle and Beckett are so good at communicating without actually saying something. Of course her walls are going to jump straight back up again – it's her defence mechanism.</p> <p>Now we're at S4 and Castle is the only person she truly has feelings for, outside of friendship or her father, who is still alive and no doubt she has doubts on how long that could last, she knows she has a target on her back, add her naturally cautious state and I don't see why we, the audience, would expect Kate to be any different.</p> <p>Again, personally I think the admissions she made during the episode are bigger than anything she has revealed about herself before. Whilst the audience (and her shrink) are the only one's who know she heard Castle, the vulnerability she showed Castle was much more than I might have expected. Perhaps part of this is the fact that she now definitely knows Castle loves her, perhaps part of it is the fact she came so close to death, perhaps it's something we haven't been made aware of yet.</p> <p>My opinion is that Kate has moved forward more than I would have expected, perhaps not far enough for some and for others they only see</p>

Opmerking [S385]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S386]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S387]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S388]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S389]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S390]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S391]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S392]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

	<p>the negative that she hasn't confessed her love for him. Personally I don't think it would have worked if that had happened because the relationship wouldn't have been true and real, she would have had one foot out of the door, even though Castle means far more to her than anyone else has. At least now she has finally been honest about where she stands, given him hope that there can be more, just not now. Again, I think had she admitted that she had heard Castle, the relationship would have been "forced" upon them and again it wouldn't have been natural and true.</p> <p>I'm not condoning the fact that she has lied to Castle, but similarly I don't think she had a choice if their relationship can work sometime in the future.</p> <p>Just my opinion.</p>
<p>2:27 pm September 21, 2011</p> <p>nike75</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 750</p> 	<p>Elainee3004, this is a wonderful post and I agree completely — I certainly was proud of Kate in this episode.</p>
<p>3:40 pm September 21, 2011</p> <p>Banksee61</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 67</p>	<p>As far as we know the last person she loved was Royce who betrayed her, so I think that reinforces the idea that she is putting up walls to protect her heart. Also they kinda said the reason for her avoiding people was because of those walls. The issue to me is that it looks like Castle overcame that quickly but in honesty it wasn't long after all this that he got the call from Mr. Smith, so yea.</p>
<p>11:55 pm September 23, 2011</p> <p>southernbygrace USA</p>	<p>I'm one of the ones that was furious with Kate and I think the character took a step backward not forward. Especially if AM believes she is still concerned with being another conquest. Castle has been pretty much devoted to her for 3 years so if she doesn't trust him by now she never will. So where most people</p>

Opmerking [S393]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S394]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S395]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S396]: Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

Opmerking [S397]: Kriek makers



Hard Core Castle Groupie

posts 138



3:12 am
September 24, 2011

jerryst316



Hard Core Castle Groupie
posts 71

saw growth, I saw her regressing. That may change with the coming episodes, I have no idea what's coming up. But I do agree, that IMO she owes Castle a HUGE apology, and just showing up at a book signing and telling him she broke up with Josh after 3 months of silence, didn't cut it for me.

[That said, Stana was brilliant, as usual. :)]

Icon by txduck

Opmerking [S398]: Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

Opmerking [S399]: Fandom

For me, I think there are times when we over-romanticize Beckett and Castle, and thus, when we experience the events of Rise, we tend to see them through that lens. Castle hasn't been devoted to Beckett for three years, he's barely even known that he was in love with her for more than half a year, we don't know that Castle is the only one Beckett has feelings for now, and though he has been her partner for those three years, both Caste and Beckett have been in their own relationships, indulging in deep fried twinkies or hunky detectives. And I think this is exactly where we see more of this relationship than actually exists on screen, we have no idea if Beckett really and truly cared for Josh and we have no idea what her exact feelings are for Castle (in fact, we only know that Castle has truly fallen in love because he said the words), but more than that, Beckett has made it clear since the beginning of season 3 that she is going to give her and Josh a shot. That means one thing, if Castle fell in love with her somewhere along the way, then Beckett isn't obligated in any way to dump Josh immediately for him nor is she somehow a bad person or somehow treating Castle badly by not giving in to the feelings Castle now embraces. Of all the times that Beckett said always, took him to dinner when he was devastated over Gina, or was simply there for him when he needed someone, the same exact things can be said of Castle, and that simply means that they are equals who are great friends and partners. Nowhere in there is Shakespeare...

Opmerking [S400]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S401]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S402]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

~~And just as I think that Castle shouldn't regret for one second going to the Hamptons with Gina, I don't think Beckett should regret for one minute not calling Castle. One of the reasons that Caste is in the position he is now is because he pushes, he doesn't back down when it comes to Beckett, and while that can be an endearing trait, it can also be tiring for the other person. Especially when that person is in another relationship, and as much as we like to talk about Beckett's relationship with Josh and denigrate it, I don't think it was nearly as bad as we like to think it was given that she did seem to let him in at some point. So at this point, not only does Beckett have to deal with a boyfriend that she really does like, she has to deal with her mentor being killed to save her, the guilt that must be associated with that, another mentor who was brutally murdered in an alley, her mother's~~

case that has weighed her down for over 12 years and that she has had to live with every day since Castle opened the files, friends who want nothing more to protect her and make her better in ways that THEY want, and finally Castle's declaration of love when she was passing out from blood loss. Oh and let's not forget the giant scar and horrible pain she must be still be in after nearly being killed.

Opmerking [S403]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

I can't imagine being pulled in that many directions, being told over and over again what you need to do with your life, being constantly pressured to make the choice everyone else thinks you should make, and then not wanting some space from that after nearly being murdered. As Castle said in Knockdown, he sometimes forgets that she is the one whose mother was murdered and she is the one who has to live with it everyday, and while she isn't going to walk away because she simply can't, Castle can do so at anytime. It ISN'T his life, it's hers. It's easy to want a relationship and push for what you want when the weight of the world isn't on your shoulders, and in that sense, she shouldn't apologize for taking time to plant her feet. In fact, that's the only way the world doesn't end up crushing you...

Opmerking [S404]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter en koppelen aan eigen leven

~~The perfect example of what I am talking about is in the conversation they had in Rise. Not only does Castle's anger about not being called cause him to quip about her relationship with Josh, but he asks her if she knows what it's like to see someone you care about nearly die in front you.~~

-
You know what I wonder? I wonder what it's like to actually be the one who nearly dies...

Opmerking [S405]: Fantasie

And see that's the thing, it's not Castle's fault because he is clearly angry and hurt, and I don't blame him in the slightest. But if we want to be real and human, then we have to understand that that conversation in Rise is exactly what Beckett was trying to avoid before she was ready because I think she knew that if Castle had pushed his feelings on her when she was so raw and vulnerable and hurting, then it wouldn't have ended up on swings. In fact, I know it wouldn't have ended up on swings, and I would bet that the fallout would have been much worse.

Opmerking [S406]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

So what does that mean? It means that sometimes human beings are dumb and fail to follow through with things they should. It means that relationships aren't usually products of Harlequin Press, and sometimes, we do things for understandable and justifiable reasons that make people angry, none of which we should apologize for. More than anything else though, it means that Beckett and Castle aren't the couple we sometimes wish they were, and neither one needs to apologize for that either.

Opmerking [S407]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

3:15 am
September 24, 2011

<p>Admin</p>  <p>Admin posts 3762</p> 	<p>I honestly don't think it's about Beckett not trusting Castle – I think it's more to do with the fact that she just knows she is in a bad place emotionally and can't deal with anyone no matter how much she loves them while she's in the emotional state/frame of mind she's in... it's nothing to do with Castle – it's her having to come to terms with events in her life, to learn who she is herself before she can be in a committed relationship.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Site Administrator</p>
<p>5:41 am September 24, 2011</p> <p>Cayenne The Netherlands</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 811</p> 	<p>I think Kate trusts Castle now more than she's ever done before, but she's making a real adult decision (like Stana said.) I think that shows her great self-judgement and character. This way she also tries to not hurt Castle. If she'd dive into a relationship right now, she'd not be able to give 100% of herself and she feels that her and Castle deserve more than that. Castle might not realize that now, but he will at some point.</p>
<p>7:47 am September 24, 2011</p> <p>little eve</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 471</p>	<p>jerryyst316 said:</p> <p>For me, I think there are times when we over-romanticize Beckett and Castle, and thus, when we experience the events of Rise, we tend to see them through that lens. Castle hasn't been devoted to Beckett for three years, he's barely even known that he was in love with her for more than half a year, we don't know that Castle is the only one Beckett has feelings for now, and though he has been her partner for those three years, both Caste and Beckett have been in their own relationships, indulging in deep fried twinkies or hunky detectives. And I think this is exactly where we see more of this relationship than actually exists on screen, we have no idea if Beckett really and truly cared for Josh and we have no idea what her exact feelings are for Castle (in fact, we only know that Castle has truly fallen in love because he said the words), but more than that, Beckett has made it clear since the beginning of season 3 that she is going to give her and Josh a shot. That means one thing, if Castle fell in love with her somewhere along the way then Beckett isn't obligated in</p>

Opmerking [S408]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S409]: Fandom

Opmerking [S410]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

any way to dump Josh immediately for him nor is she somehow a bad person or somehow treating Castle badly by not giving in to the feelings Castle now embraces. Of all the times that Beckett said always, took him to dinner when he was devastated over Gina, or was simply there for him when he needed someone, the same exact things can be said of Castle, and that simply means that they are equals who are great friends and partners. Nowhere in there is Shakespeare...

-
And just as I think that Castle shouldn't regret for one second going to the Hamptons with Gina, I don't think Beckett should regret for one minute not calling Castle. One of the reasons that Castle is in the position he is now is because he pushes, he doesn't back down when it comes to Beckett, and while that can be an endearing trait, it can also be tiring for the other person. Especially when that person is in another relationship, and as much as we like to talk about Beckett's relationship with Josh and denigrate it, I don't think it was nearly as bad as we like to think it was given that she did seem to let him in at some point. So at this point, not only does Beckett have to deal with a boyfriend that she really does like, she has to deal with her mentor being killed to save her, the guilt that must be associated with that, another mentor who was brutally murdered in an alley, her mother's case that has weighed her down for over 12 years and that she has had to live with every day since Castle opened the files, friends who want nothing more to protect her and make her better in ways that THEY want, and finally Castle's declaration of love when she was passing out from blood loss. Oh and let's not forget the giant scar and horrible pain she must be still be in after nearly being killed.

-
I can't imagine being pulled in that many directions, being told over and over again what you need to do with your life, being constantly pressured to make the choice everyone else thinks you should make, and then not wanting some space from that after nearly being murdered. As Castle said in Knockdown, he sometimes forgets that she is the one whose mother was murdered and she is the one who has to live with it everyday, and while she isn't going to walk away because she simply can't, Castle can do so at anytime. It ISN'T his life, it's hers. It's easy to want a relationship and push for what you want when the weight of the world isn't on your shoulders, and in that sense, she shouldn't apologize for taking time to plant her feet. In fact, that's the only way the world doesn't end in crushing you —

-

The perfect example of what I am talking about is in the conversation they had in Rise. Not only does Castle's anger about not being called cause him to quip about her relationship with Josh, but he asks her if she knows what it's like to see someone you care about nearly die in front you.

-

You know what I wonder? I wonder what it's like to actually be the one who nearly dies...

-

And see that's the thing, it's not Castle's fault because he is clearly angry and hurt, and I don't blame him in the slightest. But if we want to be real and human, then we have to understand that that conversation in Rise is exactly what Beckett was trying to avoid before she was ready because I think she knew that if Castle had pushed his feelings on her when she was so raw and vulnerable and hurting, then it wouldn't have ended up on swings. In fact, I know it wouldn't have ended up on swings, and I would bet that the fallout would have been much worse.

-

So what does that mean? It means that sometimes human beings are dumb and fail to follow through with things they should. It means that relationships aren't usually products of Harlequin Press, and sometimes, we do things for understandable and justifiable reasons that make people angry, none of which we should apologize for. More than anything else though, it means that Beckett and Castle aren't the couple we sometimes wish they were, and neither one needs to apologize for that either.

Yes, those characters are "human" and being human is messy and even the couples we love to love aren't perfect. Great analysis!

7:59 am
September 24, 2011

dmcw
Illinois



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 3202

Great post [jerry316](#). The subtext in this show certainly lends itself to the tendency to over romanticize the state of their relationship. I am very much in agreement with what you had to say regarding Beckett's state of mind and her need for space. What has always struck me about these characters is that even when I've not liked the decisions they've made, the choices have made sense to me based on their circumstances or characterization. Beckett has always been shown to be a closed-off individual, and it did not surprise me that she went into hiding at one of the lowest emotional points in her life.

Opmerking [S411]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

<p>9:19 am September 24, 2011</p> <p>nike75</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 750</p> 	<p>That was a great read, jerry316 — thank you!</p>
<p>11:07 am September 24, 2011</p> <p>Leftfield Montana, USA</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 2119</p>	<p>Awesome post, jerry316. I really agree with you on your views of where Beckett's at right now.</p> <p>Both Castle and Beckett are both flawed, emotional people who are trying to do the right thing. They aren't perfect, the relationship is messy, they're human. It's one of the reasons why I find this relationship and these characters so appealing.</p>
<p>11:49 am September 24, 2011</p> <p>southernbygrace USA</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 138</p>  	<p>Admin said:</p> <p>I honestly don't think it's about Beckett not trusting Castle — I think it's more to do with the fact that she just knows she is in a bad place emotionally and can't deal with anyone no matter how much she loves them while she's in the emotional state/frame of mind she's in... it's nothing to do with Castle — it's her having to come to terms with events in her life, to learn who she is herself before she can be in a committed relationship.</p> <p>This, I can agree with to an extent. As cliched as it sounds, I do believe it's a case of "It's not you, it's me." when it comes to Kate. My anger had little to do with them as a couple (although it's getting to be past time for them to be together) and more to do with their friendship. When I say devoted, I'm not talking about him being in love with her. I'm talking about him being true to their friendship and the respect he has shown her as a cop and as a woman. She simply did not afford him that same</p>

Opmerking [S412]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S413]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S414]: Emotionele reactie kijker

	<p>respect IMO.</p> <p>But we also know Castle wasn't the only 'friend' she ignored. She hadn't been in touch with Lanie either. I guess I'll never understand the mentality or motivations or someone that could shut out their friends and then suddenly when they need something from their friend, want things back like they were before. Makes me wonder if she would EVER have contacted him had she not needed that info about the money trail.</p> <p>Icon by txduck</p>
<p>11:52 am September 24, 2011</p> <p>grapes</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 393</p>	<p>Great lines jerryst316: jerryst316 said: You know what I wonder? I wonder what it's like to actually be the one who nearly dies...</p> <p>When you had such an experience you'd wish you'd never would experience something like that again. If you realize your life is important to you and getting the best thing out of it matters you've learned the most important lesson. You stop taking that for granted. And see that's the thing, it's not Castle's fault because he is clearly angry and hurt, and I don't blame him in the slightest. But if we want to be real and human, then we have to understand that that conversation in Rise is exactly what Beckett was trying to avoid before she was ready because I think she knew that if Castle had pushed his feelings on her when she was so raw and vulnerable and hurting, then it wouldn't have ended up on swings. In fact, I know it wouldn't have ended up on swings, and I would bet that the fallout would have been much worse.</p> <p>That's an assumption and most likely what Kate thinks. He never said anything like that or hinted about it. To me its a bit unfair to Castle. He's being nothing but supportive and caring all the time. And not because he just wants to sleep with her.</p>
<p>1:05 pm September 24, 2011</p> <p>jerryst316</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 71</p>	<p>southernbygrace said: Admin said: I honestly don't think it's about Beckett not trusting Castle — I think it's more to do with the fact that she just knows she is in a bad place emotionally and can't deal with anyone no matter how much she loves them while she's in the emotional state/frame of mind she's in... it's nothing to do with Castle — it's her having to come to terms with events in her life, to learn who she is herself before she can be in a committed relationship.</p>

Opmerking [S415]: Kritiek karakters

Opmerking [S416]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S417]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

This, I can agree with to an extent. As cliched as it sounds, I do believe it's a case of "It's not you, it's me." when it comes to Kate. My anger had little to do with them as a couple (although it's getting to be past time for them to be together) and more to do with their friendship. When I say devoted, I'm not talking about him being in love with her. I'm talking about him being true to their friendship and the respect he has shown her as a cop and as a woman. She simply did not afford him that same respect IMO.

-
But we also know Castle wasn't the only 'friend' she ignored. She hadn't been in touch with Lanie either. I guess I'll never understand the mentality or motivations of someone that could shut out their friends and then suddenly when they need something from their friend, want things back like they were before. Makes me wonder if she would EVER have contacted him had she not needed that info about the money trail.

In many ways, I think Kate thought that when she returned to the precinct, everything would be back to normal and she wouldn't be forced into these mind numbing conversations that her friends would press upon her. And to an extent, that was the case, Esposito and Ryan were there and everything was back to normal with them fairly quickly, but Lanie and Castle weren't there and that's where the problem lies.

If it's just about Castle, then clearly she talks to Lanie, but it's not about Castle or Lanie, it's about her and her ability to heal without the two greatest shippers (Lanie and Castle because come on they want it more than any shipper out there) of their relationship hounding her. Let me ask you something Southrnbygrace, do you think Beckett can read Castle fairly well? What I mean is this, can she just look at him and know what he is thinking without having to ask? If she can, do you think she caught on to just how hurt he was in the hospital room when she claimed she didn't remember?

If you answer yes to any of those, then what kind of pressure do you think they she would have faced had she actually admitted to remembering? He would know that she knows he loves her, he has said it, and now she is having to deal with her being shot and being with Josh. How do you honestly think that ends?

Clearly Castle would want to talk about it, and unless she dumps Josh right there in the hospital and declares her undying love for Castle, there is going to be a certain amount of rejection there whether she wants it or not. Let's face it, this isn't fan fiction

Opmerking [S418]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S419]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S420]: Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

where she instantly remembers the ILY, dumps Josh in the hospital and jumps right into a relationship with Castle while also learning to breathe again from the gaping wound she nearly died from. That is certainly romantic and might even happen to other people in the real world, but that clearly is not Castle and Beckett. What's worse is that she can't even tell Castle that they might have a chance later on like she does at the swings because it would be wholly unfair to Josh, and though that might be alright with most us in the fandom, that's not who Kate is either.

So she is faced with the choice of upsetting either Castle or Josh or trying to find a way to get some space and sort things out to the point where she can be fair to both. And again, she has to do all that with all that other stuff hanging over her.

That's one of the reasons I think we over-romanticize them: there is no universe anywhere, no Star Trek-esque dimensional rift where *this* Beckett is ever going to dump Josh in that hospital (especially after he was instrumental in saving her life...) bed and take up a relationship with Castle that quickly. And honestly, I would think much less of her if she did. We may not value her relationship with Josh because we haven't seen much of it and because we want so badly for her to be with Castle, but she does value it and he is a real human being whose feelings matter to her. Of course, the exact same thing can be said about her and Castle. And in the end, being fair to both, IMO, meant that they both would be hurt.

Life works like that sometimes, and the last thing that any of us should ever do is apologize for being human. Being human is a gift, not a curse...

Opmerking [S421]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S422]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S423]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S424]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

1:38 am
September 29, 2011

beckettrocks
Denver, CO



Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 73

Well it probably doesn't help that I have a total girl crush on Beckett but I thought she was fantastic! I didn't even THINK about how she would feel towards Castle for dragging her out of the hanger... obviously she was going to feel something! I think she mostly used that as an excuse to get some space from him, but I felt like a total idiot for not even thinking she might be mad at him. Her mentor was killed and she could have protected him, or at least that's how she felt. Plus she knew he died to save her, she's no dumbie.

I thought you could see it on her face at the hospital that she was lying to him about not remembering, especially when you watch it back. **AWESOME!**

I thought Beckett was perfect! I loved that she freaked out when the gun was pointed at her both times and that it took a little effort to

Opmerking [S425]: Waardering karakters

Opmerking [S426]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

regain her confidence.

The episode was heavy, especially for this show. I liked that they lightened it up a little by shooting the one scene on the swings and by having her wait in line to get a book signed. They think about everything!

I'm really interested to see how far they take the relationship between Castle and Beckett this year, I hope not too far... I feel like they could get at least another season out of the tension before they were to get together... especially if they give us some freebies here and there. I would love to see an episode with a steamy dream that either of them have... like the pool table dream promo!

Opmerking [S427]: Waardering karakters

Opmerking [S428]: Wensen

User	Post
<p>8:05 pm November 21, 2011</p> <p>GhostWriter</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 595</p>	<p>Brace yourself for a wild ride kiddies.—</p> <p>First observation: Time to start the 'give this woman an Emmy' campaign. Minute by minute Katic makes you see Beckett falling apart and then pulling herself back together. Some of the tells are grand and flashy and many more are just a matter of subtle expression changes and body language. You don't just see it, you feel it with her. I flinched each time she did during the first half-hour.</p> <p>Even if the rest of the show stank – and it didn't – the scene in the evidence locker between Beckett and Esposito is worth it all. And Ryan is a staunch supporter of the Boss too.</p> <p>Question: Has Beckett ever called Esposito Javi before? Nice touch – most of the time, Gates accepts Castle as part of the team and asks him for his info in exactly the same way as she asks Espo or Ryan. Well, at least until he bursts in with the info that Alexis has come up with – and then she backs off really quickly from her initial reaction of 'not now Castle' when the information proves to be key.</p> <p>The negotiating with the bank robber skills acquired two shows ago came in handy – at least as a stall until the cavalry arrives in the guise of Esposito.</p> <p>And for the shippers – we have an 'always' in the almost last scene.</p> <p>The last scene between Beckett and the shrink is heartbreaking, uplifting, hopeful and ultimately positive. To the question are you ready to let go (of the past) – "Yeah, I think I am."</p> <p>This wasn't the Castle show – this was the Beckett show – front and centre, all the time. The boys (and Lanie) play key supporting roles, but supporting they are – at least with respect to the focus of the episode. And Katic more than stepped up to deliver. Wow!</p>

Opmerking [S429]: Waardering karakters

Opmerking [S430]: Fysieke reactie

Opmerking [S431]: Waardering karakters

Opmerking [S432]: Waardering karakters, fandom

<p>8:11 pm November 21, 2011</p> <p>evesix Canada</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 93</p>	<p>My first thought at the end of the episode, "wait, what were the 3 words that we heard so much about? There were 4 (or 5) at the end?" But anyway, I love it because it shows that she's willing to move forward despite her mom's case.</p> <p>Really wonderful episode and really wonderful acting by everyone – particularly Stana and Jon. I like the use of distorted sound or silence as well throughout. I can't wait to rewatch it.</p>
<p>8:17 pm November 21, 2011</p> <p>sn02py</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 11</p>	<p>Awesome episode on all accounts.</p> <p>Stana was amazing, as expected. She played "holding on by a thread" perfectly. Loved to see the Beckett we all know back toward the end of the episode. And the therapist scene at the end...love the doors it opens up!</p> <p>I felt really bad for Castle, but was glad to see that he was smart enough to know that he wasn't the one who could help her. End scene was cute...he's so good at breaking the ice. I'm glad Beckett realized that while Esposito was the one who helped her, Castle was the one who really stood behind her. By thanking him, I think she was really apologizing for snapping at him.</p> <p>Gates seemed a little more accepting of Castle in this episode, especially after his paper dolls discovery. Hopefully no one tells him that Alexis is the one that broke that one open! 🙄</p> <p>Can't say much else at this point. I really, really enjoyed it and will be watching it again at 10 (and many times after, I'm sure!).</p>
<p>8:40 pm November 21, 2011</p> <p>comatoes canada</p> 	<p>wow.</p>

Opmerking [S433]: Waardering karakters en makers

Opmerking [S434]: Waardering karakters

Opmerking [S435]: Waardering aflevering

Opmerking [S436]: Fandom

Castle Groupie posts 13	
8:48 pm November 21, 2011	
<p>GhostWriter</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 595</p>	<p>sn02py said: I'm glad Beckett realized that while Esposito was the one who helped her, Castle was the one who really stood behind her. By thanking him, I think she was really apologizing for snapping at him.</p> <p>All her boys helped her, stood beside her, backed her up – and if you look at the looks back and forth near the end between Beckett and Espo, then Ryan, then the conversation with Castle, it's clear she knows it and is grateful to all of them. And then there's the final scene with the shrink – yet another boy who will help Beckett heal herself.</p> <p>Net: i hereby rename this episode: "Beckett and her boys." Plus for the boys – not one, but two shots of a partially unclad Beckett chest as she examines the physical scar from her sniper. –It does seem curiously small, but i guess they approached the damage from the bullet from the side, not right down her breast bone as i would have expected.</p>
9:29 pm November 21, 2011	
<p>sn02py</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 11</p>	<p>GhostWriter said: sn02py said: I'm glad Beckett realized that while Esposito was the one who helped her, Castle was the one who really stood behind her. By thanking him, I think she was really apologizing for snapping at him.</p> <p>All her boys helped her, stood beside her, backed her up – and if you look at the looks back and forth near the end between Beckett and Espo, then Ryan, then the conversation with Castle, it's clear she knows it and is grateful to all of them. And then there's the final scene with the shrink – yet another boy who will help Beckett heal herself.</p> <p>-</p> <p>Sorry...I should have worded that differently. I just meant that even though there wasn't a whole lot Castle could actively do, he was helping her the best way he could: by getting help from someone he knew could do it better and by stepping aside while still being supportive. It could have easily went unnoticed, but I was glad that she recognized his role in helping her through it.</p> <p>I really loved the thank you (I think, I need to watch again) she lipped to Esposito after his shot. That and pretty much everything between the two of them.</p>
10:14 pm	

Opmerking [S437]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S438]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

November 21, 2011	<p>I loved loved loved loved the epi!!!! Stana katic is freaking brilliant!!! She moved me to tears in a number of scenes!!! I liked the scene where she thanks castle for giving her space and he says 'Always'!!!! Castle's concern for his family scene was good. When he told martha and alexis that they were under house arrest until they catch the sniper!!! Alexis breaking the clue was actually funny and random! It just came out of nowhere! But molly quinn was good in that scene! I have absolutely no words for the scene between kate and espo and that rifle!!! OMG!!! That was soooooooooooooo good!!! I am soo glad they did not show these scenes in the preview!!! Stana and jon killed that scene!!! The way espo supported kate at every step was brilliant!!! The scene with kate and the sniper!!! Effing good!!! Every scene of stana in this ep was Emmy Worthy!!!! The last scene with the therapist. Well we already knew what she was gonna say thanks to the interviews!!! But soo Good!!! Even lanie and ryan's concern was seen throughout! And i loved the looks shared between castle and espo!!! Too good!!! I officially have a huge crush on Javier esposito and Jon!!! The character and the actor killed me tonight!!! I would love to see an entire episode focused on espo's military training!!! In short!!! This ep was every worth the Hype!!!!</p>	<p>Opmerking [S439]: Waardering aflevering</p> <p>Opmerking [S440]: Waardering makers</p> <p>Opmerking [S441]: Waardering aflevering</p> <p>Opmerking [S442]: Waardering makers, aflevering</p> <p>Opmerking [S443]: Waardering karakters</p>
10:33 pm November 21, 2011	<p>lulu12345 said: I officially have a huge crush on Javier esposito and Jon!!! The character and the actor killed me tonight!!! I would love to see an entire episode focused on espo's military training!!!</p> <p>me too!!! OMG!!!</p> <p>This episode is in my 5 best episodes list!!! And Stana's acting skills!! I can even say how I feel about this epi! IT WAS BREATHTAKING!!!!</p>	<p>Opmerking [S444]: Waardering aflevering</p>
10:36 pm November 21, 2011	<p>This episode was so amazing, that I have done sth with my earlier post and now it is one big quote :D</p>	<p>Opmerking [S445]: Waardering aflevering</p>

lulu12345
India, Mumbai



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 639

zocha90
Poland



Castle Groupie
posts 26

zocha90
Poland



Castle Groupie
posts 26

11:04 pm
November 21, 2011

DramaWonder



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 651

lulu12345 said:

I loved loved loved loved the epi!!!!
 Stana katie is freaking brilliant!!! She moved me to tears in a number of scenes!!!
 I liked the scene where she thanks castle for giving her space and he says 'Always'!!!!
 Castle's concern for his family scene was good. When he told martha and alexis that they were under house arrest until they catch the sniper!!!
 Alexis breaking the clue was actually funny and random! It just came out of nowhere! But molly quinn was good in that scene!
 I have absolutely no words for the scene between kate and espo and that rifle!!! OMG!!! That was sooooooooooooo good!!!
 I am soo glad they did not show these scenes in the preview!!! Stana and jon killed that scene!!!
 The way espo supported kate at every step was brilliant!!! The scene with kate and the sniper!!! Effing good!!!
 Every scene of stana in this ep was Emmy Worthy!!!!
 The last scene with the therapist. Well we already knew what she was gonna say thanks to the interviews!!! But soo Good!!!
 Even lanie and ryan's concern was seen throughout!
 And i loved the looks shared between castle and espo!!! Too good!!!
 I officially have a huge crush on Javier esposito and Jon!!! The character and the actor killed me tonight!!! I would love to see an entire episode focused on espo's military training!!!
 In short!!! This ep was every worth the Hype!!!!
THIS THIS THIS!!! SUMMED UP HOW I FEEL PERFECTLY!!

11:14 pm
November 21, 2011

lmr32385
Naperville, IL



Hard Core Castle

Amazing episode filled with amazing acting. Loved the Esposito-Beckett dynamic in the episode. Also, loved how concerned and worried Castle was about Beckett. He really showed how much he cares about her (which we already know, but it was nice to see it play out the way it did). I'm not going to say much more since others have already mentioned things I enjoyed/loved/liked about the episode. Also, I can see how much sh** is going to hit the fan once Castle's secret comes out to Beckett now that she's willing to

Opmerking [S446]: Waardering aflevering

Opmerking [S447]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

<p>Groupie posts 263</p>	<p>move on and let go of her mom's murder/the past. All in all, great episode with great performances all around. Definitely one of my favorites.</p>
<p>11:18 pm November 21, 2011</p> <p>jackieh90</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 90</p>	<p>This episode was AMAZING! Stana was incredible! Definitely award worthy! And Jon was amazing too! Their scenes together, (and especially the one with the rifle that shot her) wow! The whole cast was just great this episode; Nathan, Seamus, Penny, Susan, and Molly!</p> <p>The only negative thing... No "Cuffed" promo</p>
<p>11:30 pm November 21, 2011</p> <p>southernbygrace USA</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 138</p>  	<p>This episode showcased mainly Stana and Jon and both did a wonderful job. Javi was the perfect person to talk to her and he played his role in that discussion very well.</p> <p>But again I'm left saddened and angered by the lack of movement in the Castle/Beckett relationship. I think I'm just going to be better off if I begin to plan for them to NEVER be together. Because honestly I don't think either of them have their heads far enough out of their butts to make something happen. The show continues to disappoint me the season in this area.</p> <p>- I'm still loving Martha and Alexis and Rick scenes though. :)</p> <p>Icon by txduck</p>
<p>11:37 pm November 21, 2011</p> <p>little eve</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 471</p>	<p>Now that I've had a little while to recover I'd like to join into the enthusiasm that you guys already expressed.</p> <p>What a fabulous episode!! Wonderful acting by Stana. Her portrayal of Kate's fear, shell-shocked behavior, confusion, and frustration was executed beautifully. As you guys above already said, it was Beckett's episode and Stana can carry that load... seemingly effortlessly.</p> <p>Jon Huertas nailed this one as well. He gave Javi the right tone in each scene: this knowing, caring, and yet respectful behavior that someone would have while watching someone he respects and cares about falling apart. He really hit that tone so well. I was very impressed with this performance.</p> <p>Rick is just simply such a rock for Kate if she weren't in love with</p>

Opmerking [S448]: Voorspelling

Opmerking [S449]: Waardering aflevering

Opmerking [S450]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S451]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S452]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S453]: Waardering makers

	<p>him yet, she would so fall for him now.</p> <p>While watching the development of the story it hit me again (!!)</p> <p>nothing in the writing of this show is accidental. Over the last few episodes we've commented several times how our two teams were switched around (Kate and Ryan, Esposito and Castle in "Kick the Ballistics" and "Demons", then the boys in Atlantic City and Kate with Gates in NY). While I watched tonight episode it hit me: <i>THIS</i> was why! They needed to set up that the characters changing partners was natural behavior at this point. That everyone could lean on everyone and not just their official work partner. In this episode we saw several "pairings": Kate on her own and the boys working in the field, Kate leaning on Esposito and then both leaving to catch the sniper while Castle and Ryan stayed at the precinct to work on another angle. It all worked beautifully and almost without words. Castle asks Esposito to "step in" and help Kate with what she is going through, because he cannot. Awesome writing and character development!!</p> <p>I was also pleased that Gates finally seems to pay some attention to Castle! I really liked how today they all worked as a team, actually listening to each other. They rock together!!</p> <p>Favorite scenes?</p> <p>Kate and Esposito had me choked up! Beautiful!</p> <p>Kate and the sniper! How she has to face being shot by a sniper yet again. How she faces this with strength and emotional depth! How she connected her own experiences and pain with his... All of it simply <i>stunning!</i></p> <p>Esposito saving her life by shooting the sniper. A former sniper saved her life! Mind blowing!</p> <p>Kate and Castle so sweet! "She owes me about 100 coffees". Yes-Rick she does...and she knows it.</p> <p>Kate is finally ready to tackle the demons of her mom's murder and of her own shooting. That wall is coming down fast. Chunks of it are flying all over the place. There is a huge hole in it already and you can see Rick looking in.</p> <p>Oh, and there was that "always"!</p> <p>I will have to rewatch the episode several times before I can even attempt to get all the small details etc that go into every moment and interaction. Not to mention sorting out my own feelings. For now, I am incredibly happy that this episode not only met my expectations but took them and threw them out the window. Once again they hit it out of the ballpark for me.</p> <p><small>"Just waiting for my partner. Maybe you've seen her. Pretty girl. Thinks she can leap tall buildings in a single bound, carries the weight of the world on her shoulders, yet still manages to laugh at some of my jokes." — Castle, 4x09</small></p>
<p>12:01 am November 22, 2011</p>	
<p>eljhs5</p>	<p>What a fantastic episode.. We all know how great an actress Stana is and this episode proves it again. This episode will go as one of the favorites</p>

Opmerking [S454]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S455]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S456]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S457]: Fandom

	<p>Good job for the whole Castle team...</p>
<p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 880</p>	
<p>12:01 am November 22, 2011</p>	
<p>way2obsessed</p>	<p>Agree with all of the posts above. You summed it up better than I could've. Yes, even more than before, I'm a die hard Stanatic. She definitely nailed it! How do people get nominated for emmys anyways? Can we start a write in campaign?</p> <p>For those of you who are just now developing crushes on Jon/Javi, where have you been? I know Castle's the star. But I'd never heard of Nathan Fillion before I discovered Castle. Jon has always been the underutilized eye candy for me. But this performance was not about his hotness :). He, like Stana, brought it—the right emotion, nonverbals, looks. You felt his empathy, caring and protection. The only negative for me was that I think I'd seen too many of the critical scenes in the previews. It would have been better if I'd gone spoiler free and had more surprises. But there was so much hype, my OCD kicked in and I had to see every spoiler, even the GMA one that just came out this morning! The scenes that were new (Javi and Beckett in the evidence room, Beckett with the sniper, and Beckett with her shrink) were all epic though. Still brought me to tears. Loved the last scene with Castle. So sweet. Can't wait to see what happens next in cuffed. And, speaking of cuffed, where the freakin promo that's supposed to hold us over for another two weeks? Can I go spoiler free this time? Doubt it....</p>
	
<p>Castle Groupie posts 20</p>	
<p>12:09 am November 22, 2011</p>	
<p>lulu12345 India, Mumbai</p> 	<p>way2obsessed said:</p> <p>-</p> <p>For those of you who are just now developing crushes on Jon/Javi, where have you been? I know Castle's the star. But I'd never heard of Nathan Fillion before I discovered Castle. Jon has always been the underutilized eye candy for me. But this performance was not about his hotness :). He, like Stana, brought it—the right emotion, nonverbals, looks. You felt his empathy, caring and protection.</p> <p>Better late than never right! I always found Jon to be hot! But today, I really really crushed on him! I adored his scenes with Stana!!! Brilliant chemistry displayed by both of them!!! I want more scenes between them now on a regular basis!!! Please dont</p>
<p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 639</p>	

Opmerking [S458]: Waardering makers

	let this be a one-ep thing!!!	Opmerking [S459]: Waardering karakters
<p>12:17 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>Leftfield Montana, USA</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 2119</p>	<p>Absolute perfection!</p>	
<p>12:25 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>IfOnly Texas</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 172</p>	<p>Still digesting it all. But God how I love this show.</p>	Opmerking [S460]: Waardering serie
<p>12:27 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>beckettrocks Denver, CO</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 73</p>	<p>I agree that Espisito was looking pretty good! Although my crush is still my girl crush on Beckett 😊</p> <p>Of course I liked the scene with the rifle, Beckett and Espisito! Very good!</p> <p>Stana did a fabulous job as always! I felt like I was going to throw up a few times when you could literally see her heart in her throat. She really captured the feeling of true fear!</p> <p>I loved the "Always" of course 🍷 -Glad they are taking it slow this season when it comes to Beckett-Castle. She did get shot after all... after basically ditching Montgomery to die... that wouldn't really put anyone in the mood if you know what I'm sayin'. They are keeping their relationship realistic given what's happened I think.</p> <p>I think this was Castle's first chance to prove himself to Gates which was nice. She hasn't really seen him as valuable until tonight so I think that will change their dynamic at least some.</p> <p>I was bummed that there was no promo and bummed we have to</p>	<p>Opmerking [S461]: Waardering karakters</p> <p>Opmerking [S462]: Fysieke reactie</p>

	<p>wait. Waiting sucks! I was wondering about her surgical scar. I would think an emergency heart surgery would leave a heck of a scar all down her chest. I mean they cracked her chest and everything! Maybe it's under her bra. The surgery site would be WAY worse than the bullet hole I would think. Did anyone notice the dramatic increase in fancy toys? iPad and touch screen computers... they must have gotten a budget increase at the 12th!</p>
<p>1:06 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>Moka</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 72</p>	<p>Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but In the last scene between rick and kate, When he was saying "If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but i took it as he was saying i'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handfull, Did anyone else feel like this cause i think i might be crazy 😞</p> <p>On the otherhand the rest of the episode was Great, Loved it. I could see Kates pain when she started see the flashes of "Sniper Scopes" Had me thinking this was going to be one heck of a tough ride!</p>
<p>1:08 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>naybaybay</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 22</p>	<p>To say that this episode was AMAZING would be an understatement. From Kate calling Espo "Javi" 😊 To Castle calling Beckett a "Pretty Girl" 🍷:</p> <p>Anyone else lol when they CLEARLY showed the man's hands CUFFED under the table?! 😂</p> <p>We got an "always" — which if you had told me before the episode would make an appearance I might have been hesitant but it really just needed to be said in that moment.</p> <p>Stana – how much better can she get? I swear if she does not WIN an Emmy or something for this episode I will be forced to resort to violence.</p> <p>There was a little "Reckett"?? moment there too —haha 😂 This episode definitely reminded me that Esposito and Ryan have been there for Beckett for a lot longer than Castle has. Which makes his strong presence in her life even more incredible. —</p> <p>And the end the therapist asking her if she was ready to move on, I was so screaming at the screen! "YES!" And then... "Yeah, I think I am" I laughed and cried and then I died.</p> <p>I NEVER actually cry at any show or film, but tonight the tears were honestly streaming. I probably relate a little bit to Beckett because I was in a car crash when I was 10, which killed my Grandma and Great Uncle and left me seriously injured. And so now I don't have much memory from before that time, and it has been a struggle to recall and</p>

Opmerking [S463]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S464]: Waardering karakters

Opmerking [S465]: Waardering aflevering

Opmerking [S466]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S467]: Emotionele reactie kijker

Opmerking [S468]: Fysieke reactie

	<p>deal with the actual accident as well – still now, after 10 years, I have trouble.</p> <p>Bottom line – Stana Katie for ALL the awards!!!!!!</p>
<p>1:09 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>lulu12345 India, Mumbai</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 639</p>	<p>Moka said:</p> <p>Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but In the last scene between rick and kate, When he was saying "If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but i took it as he was saying i'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handful, Did anyone else feel like this cause i think i might be crazy 🤪</p> <p>no i did not feel like that. Because in the end he said 'always'! Thats all that matters to me. AM said always is their way of saying ILU! so i was happy!</p>
<p>1:22 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>nike75</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 750</p> 	<p>What a brilliant episode all around. I didn't cry when I watched "Knockout", I didn't cry watching "Rise" but I sure cried watching this episode. Stana played all of Beckett's emotions perfectly, sometimes subtle like her increasing fear during the first briefing at the precinct, sometimes more open like in her apartment – but she always nails it. And I was so glad that Esposito stepped up and helped her through it, Jon really gave an incredible performance tonight. I loved BOTH scenes with the therapist, and seeing Kate making that breakthrough at the end was nothing short of amazing. It's also funny how she tells the shrink that she is afraid that she is letting her mom down, something we so often talked about it here. I'll definitely do an scene by scene analysis for this one, there are so much little things. And while it was dramatic, the show never is MELOdramatic, something I really like. ETA: Just adding one thing about the confrontation scene with the sniper. I think part of that was also kind of therapeutic for Kate. Not the almost dying part (again – <i>this is a little bit of a running gag by now ;)</i>) but having the guy look into her eyes when he shots her. I think, part of the PTSD for Kate is the not seeing it coming and not being able to face the last moments of your life. Like the murder of her mom Kate getting shot was sudden and unpredictable and this is what makes her a victim so much. And I love how she takes back this control over her life in the last scene.</p>
<p>1:36 am November 22, 2011</p>	

Opmerking [S469]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S470]: Fysieke reactie

Opmerking [S471]: Waardering aflevering

Opmerking [S472]: Waardering makers

skyisblue1



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 504

Wow – Powerful! that's the word that first comes to mind with "Kill Shot". Powerful and brilliant. First off Bravo to Alexi Hawley for a wonderful script. And the editing from David Latham, both with the visuals and audio was simply outstanding. Loved the audio editing during the early precinct scene, simply fantastic.

I think the fancy toys, which really I could do without, is more product placement than increased budget. I was fond of the old school Castle look but at least Beckett's murder board is unchanged.

Like everyone has said SK was simply wonderful tonight, as was the entire cast. I have been a JH / Espo fan from the pilot on and have always been eager to see more of the Beckett/Espo partnership/friendship, and all their scenes were spot on. The evidence room scene was so powerful, Beckett admitting she is damaged goods was so sad and the empathy and understanding shown by Javi and acted by JH was beautiful. I adored Beckett's little smile of acknowledgment and thanks to Javi when she rejoined the group in the coffee house.

Castle and NF also shone for me, very understated but outstanding none the less. I loved Castle suggesting he and Beckett hang back at the precinct when Espo and Co were off to the warehouse, and the look that passed between Espo and Castle was just right.

Always with this show it's the little things that make such a difference; like Beckett playing with her hands in the interrogation room like she did in Cops and Robbers. And even Castle did it when waiting for Kate in their final scene together, which was another scene that I loved. Also loved both Espo and Castle and their interaction with Kate after the initial interrogation scene, they so have her back.

The line from the sniper's sister "you can't give help if someone won't take it" really hit home with Kate, and Castle noticed as he notices just about everything.

The only small gripes I have are Alexis and the Art History clue was a little too trite, the new captain or Ryan could have been a Art fan and it would have worked better for me. Plus the school bus was a little too noisy and busy with everyone standing up, is that allowed in the States? as it's not here in Oz.

This was a simply a outstanding episode, we went from the ridiculous last week, "Heartbreak Hotel" to the sublime with this one. Everyone involved should take a bow.

Opmerking [S473]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S474]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S475]: Waardering aflevering

User	Post
1:45 am November 22, 2011	

<p>skyisblue1</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 504</p>	<p>Moka said:</p> <p>Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but In the last scene between rick and kate, When he was saying "If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but i took it as he was saying i'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handful, Did anyone else feel like this cause i think i might be crazy 🤪-</p> <p>-</p> <p>On the otherhand the rest of the episode was Great, Loved it. I could see Kates pain when she started see the flashes of "Sniper Scopes" Had me thinking this was going to be one heck of a tough ride!</p> <p>It was Beckett who claimed herself to be a handful, Castle agreed but by his expression and his actions throughout "Kill Shot" also showed that he is saying she is so worth it! As to the Coffee comments, I took it to mean that he hopes his old partner, meaning a healed and healthier Kate is on her way back to him, and I think we can assume by Kate's reply to Castle that she is indeed on the way back. She may be a work in progress as we all are, but she seems to finding the path. I took it to be a very positive conversation.</p>
<p>2:11 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>KB4RC</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 95</p>	<p>Okay I am finally right for once. I had said I thought Always would come back and I had a lot of negative feedback. So neener neener. lol j/k</p> <p>My only negative was at the end when Esposito shot the sniper. Why was Beckett not wearing a vest? She always has a vest on at times of going after a shooter but they needed her to be able to pull down her shirt.</p> <p>-</p> <p>But I loved this episode and I thought Castle played a big part in this, more than I expected.</p> <p>-</p> <p>I loved his statement at the end that he was looking for his partner and she owed him at least 100 cups of coffee.</p>
<p>2:16 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>nike75</p>	<p>Oh, and another thing about the last scene with the therapist. Remember when Castle told her that she is afraid to know who she is without her mom's murder to solve? She was still afraid to find out in "Rise" but now she is "ready" – I just love how they build this up.</p>

Opmerking [S476]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S477]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter



Hard Core Castle Groupie

posts 750



2:31 am
November 22, 2011

wynnara
Vancouver, Canada



Hard Core Castle Groupie
posts 106

becketrocks said:

Did anyone notice the dramatic increase in fancy toys? iPad and touch screen computers... they must have gotten a budget increase at the 12th!

Mm, the boys finally got the 'smart boards' they were asking for back in Tick Tick/Boom.

Actually what I kept noticing was that their smart boards were powered very obviously by Windows 7. Guess they had to balance Castle's love of his iPhone with some Microsoft product placements. :P

2:34 am
November 22, 2011

KB4RC



Hard Core Castle Groupie
posts 95

skyisblue1 said:

Moka said:

Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but In the last scene between rick and kate, When he was saying

"If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but i took it as he was saying i'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handful, Did anyone else feel like this cause i think i might be crazy 😊-

-
On the otherhand the rest of the episode was Great, Loved it. I could see Kates pain when she started see the flashes of "Sniper Scopes" Had me thinking this was going to be one heck of a tough ride!

It was Beckett who claimed herself to be a handful, Castle agreed but by his expresson and his actions throughout "Kill Shot" also showed that he is saying she is so worth it! As to the Coffee comments, I took it to mean that he hopes his old partner meaning a healed and healthier Kate is on her way.

	<p>back to him, and I think we can assume by Kate's reply to Castle that she is indeed on the way back. She may be a work in progress as we all are, but she seems to finding the path. I took it to be a very positive conversation.</p> <p>I loved the way Castle took care of her without her knowing. The scene when he says thank you to Esposito was classic. How he was his normal intrusive self but helped her when he could. Then how he asked Espo to help her and he showed her the gun that had shot her. Great acting by Esposito and Beckett but I did not expect Castle to play much of a part in this and not only did he help Beckett through this without her knowing, he also actually got Gates to not only listen to his theory but also had the working the smart board with him. That made the show for me right there.</p> <p>I kind of had a different spin on the 100 coffees. I thought he was saying he was going to be around a long time to collect on those coffees. His way of telling her that he would be there for her, without actually saying it.</p>
<p>2:35 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>oznute Australia</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 171</p>	<p>I loved it, every last bit (except one). 😊😊 I will anxiously await Nike's review and all the others. Ratings SHOULD be through the roof.</p> <p>Other than the given that Stana was excellent it was great to see another episode where Esposito was prominent. I reckon his take out of the shooter (oops – sniper) at the end was a call back to Gibbs taking out the guy who was going to kill Ziva, Tony (shame you beat Castle) and McGee a few seasons ago. NCIS fans all know Gibbs is a great sniper (like Booth) but who knew Espo was up there with the best! Well done, Javier!</p> <p>"Always" — welcome back!</p> <p>My only niggle was mentioned earlier by skyisblue1 — the school bus! Where were the 'adults' in charge? How could a bus load of teenagers be driven through the streets of the city with that sort of behaviour? My sister drove US school buses of high school kids and she would have pulled over and stopped rather than drive on with that sort of behaviour. I know it was to heighten the suspense but it was probably the only unbelievable part of the whole show. And yes, I know — take a deep breath, suspend belief.</p> <p>Anyway, how will we survive another 2 week hiatus!</p>
<p>2:35 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>He-Touches-Things Left Coast, Oregon</p>	<p>I'm still processing it. Need to watch it 2-3 times in the morning, then I'll have more thoughts.</p> <p>The video editing sound (and silence) shot composition during</p>

Opmerking [S478]: Verwarring realimse

Opmerking [S479]: Waardering aflevering

Opmerking [S480]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S481]: Waardering karakter

	<p>Kate's times of recalling her trauma were really unsettling. I liked it, as made these scenes even more powerful.</p> <p>I noticed that Kate started to regain control of her life in the evidence room with Espo.</p> <p>Also, Rick kept turning to Espo with his concerns about Kate – even to the point of telling him that he was probably the only one who could reach her.</p> <p>The scene with Rick & Capt. Gates alone together – he is not trying to impress her, she is listening to his insights – and it is so smoothly done, it's like they are actually working together.</p> <p>Well, that's enough for now. I'm off to bed. More tomorrow.</p>
<p>2:36 am November 22, 2011</p>	<p>wynnara said:</p> <p>becketrocks said:</p> <p>Did anyone notice the dramatic increase in fancy toys? iPad and touch screen computers... they must have gotten a budget increase at the 12th!</p> <p>Mm, the boys finally got the 'smart boards' they were asking for back in Tick Tick/Boom.</p> <p>Actually what I kept noticing was that their smart boards were powered very obviously by Windows 7. Guess they had to balance Castle's love of his iPhone with some Microsoft product placements.</p> <p>:P</p> <p>Actually, if you look closely, Castle doesn't have an iPhone. He has some sort of Windows Mobile phone. Microsoft started their product placement with his phone some time ago. The "iPads" are most likely some sort of Windows Tablet as well. Will have to look closer next time.</p>
<p>2:38 am November 22, 2011</p>	<p>KB4RC said:</p> <p>skyisblue1 said:</p> <p>Moka said:</p> <p>Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but in the last scene between Rick and Kate, when he was saying "If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but I took it as he was saying I'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handful, did anyone else feel like this cause I think I might be crazy 🤔</p> <p>-</p> <p>On the other hand the rest of the episode was Great, Loved it. I could see Kate's pain when she started see</p>
<p>lulu12345 India, Mumbai</p> 	<p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 639</p>

Opmerking [S482]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

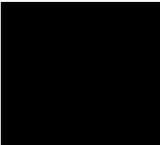
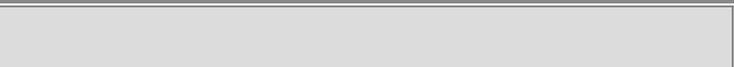
	<p>the flashes of "Sniper Scopes" Had me thinking this was going to be one heck of a tough ride!</p> <p>It was Beckett who claimed herself to be a handful, Castle agreed but by his expression and his actions throughout "Kill Shot" also showed that he is saying she is so worth it! As to the Coffee comments, I took it to mean that he hopes his old partner, meaning a healed and healthier Kate is on her way back to him, and I think we can assume by Kate's reply to Castle that she is indeed on the way back. She may be a work in progress as we all are, but she seems to finding the path. I took it to be a very positive conversation.</p> <p>I loved the way Castle took care of her without her knowing. The scene when he says thank you to Esposito was classic. How he was his normal intrusive self but helped her when he could. Then how he asked Espo to help her and he showed her the gun that had shot her. Great acting by Esposito and Beckett but I did not expect Castle to play much of a part in this and not only did he help Beckett through this without her knowing, he also actually got Gates to not only listen to his theory but also had the working the smart board with him. That made the show for me right there.</p> <p>-</p> <p>I kind of had a different spin on the 100 coffees. I thought he was saying he was going to be around a long time to collect on those coffees. His way of telling her that he would be there for her, without actually saying it.</p> <p>And who knows now that kate is completely ready to dive in, she may start bringing him coffee. I was completely satisfied by the final scene with the therapist. Yes, we pretty much knew what kate was gonna say thanks to stana's interviews, but yet seeing the scene was a diff and good experience.</p>
<p>2:50 am November 22, 2011</p>	
<p>He Touches Things Left Coast, Oregon</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1260</p>	<p>I'm still up. Had to respond to the school bus point: I've seen the bus drivers allow that kind of behaviour on special occasions, such as football or basketball teams going off to state tournaments. This is what was shown. By no means is that behaviour allowed on everyday bus routes.</p>
<p>3:09 am</p>	

- Opmerking [S483]: Voorspelling karakters
- Opmerking [S484]: Fandom

November 22, 2011	<p>He Touches Things said: I'm still up. Had to respond to the school bus point: I've seen the bus drivers allow that kind of behaviour on special occasions, such as football or basketball teams going off to state tournaments. This is what was shown. By no means is that behaviour allowed on everyday bus routes.</p> <p>Scary! A friend of my son's died on a school bus because he was standing up when an incident happened – bus had to stop quickly. OTOH, when I was in the marching band in my HS days (ancient times), we could be naughty if we won a big game!</p>
<p>oznute Australia</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 171</p>	
3:18 am November 22, 2011	<p>oznute said: He Touches Things said: I'm still up. Had to respond to the school bus point: I've seen the bus drivers allow that kind of behaviour on special occasions, such as football or basketball teams going off to state tournaments. This is what was shown. By no means is that behaviour allowed on everyday bus routes.</p> <p>- Scary! A friend of my son's died on a school bus because he was standing up when an incident happened – bus had to stop quickly. OTOH, when I was in the marching band in my HS days (ancient times), we could be naughty if we won a big game!</p> <p>Well, that was only while in town and not out on the highway.</p> <p><small>in the Pacific Time Zone</small></p>
<p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 1260</p> 	
3:24 am November 22, 2011	<p>I still cant get over stana's performance! The elevator scene where she is so nervous and she gets out and everything was loud, hazy and nauseating for her was an incredible scene!</p>
<p>lulu12345 India, Mumbai</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 639</p>	
3:30 am November 22, 2011	

Opmerking [S485]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S486]: Waardering makers

<p>Moka</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 72</p>	<p>lulu12345 said: KB4RC said: skyisblue1 said: Moka said: Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but In the last scene between rick and kate, When he was saying "If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but i took it as he was saying i'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handful, Did anyone else feel like this cause i think i might be crazy 🤔</p> <p>-</p> <p>On the otherhand the rest of the episode was Great, Loved it. I could see Kates pain when she started see the flashes of "Sniper Scopes" Had me thinking this was going to be one heck of a tough ride!</p> <p>It was Beckett who claimed herself to be a handful, Castle agreed but by his expression and his actions throughout "Kill Shot" also showed that he is saying she is so worth it! As to the Coffee comments, I took it to mean that he hopes his old partner, meaning a healed and healthier Kate is on her way back to him, and I think we can assume by Kate's reply to Castle that she is indeed on the way back. She may be a work in progress as we all are, but she seems to finding the path. I took it to be a very positive conversation.</p> <p>I loved the way Castle took care of her without her knowing. The scene when he says thank you to Esposito was classic. How he was his normal intrusive self but helped her when he could. Then how he asked Espo to help her and he showed her the gun that had shot her. Great acting by Esposito and Beckett but I did not expect Castle to play much of a part in this and not only did he help Beckett through this without her knowing, he also actually got Gates to not only listen to his theory but also had the working the smart board with him. That made the show for me right there.</p> <p>-</p> <p>I kind of had a different spin on the 100 coffees. I thought he was saying he was going to be around a long time to collect on those coffees. His way of telling her that he would be there for her, without actually saying it.</p> <p>And who knows now that kate is completely ready to dive in, she may start bringing him coffee. I was completely satisfied by the final scene with the therapist. Yes, we pretty much knew what kate was gonna say thanks to stana's interviews, but yet seeing the scene was a diff and good experience.—</p> <p>Oh i see. Now it seems more like a shipper moment 😊</p>
<p>3:40 am November 22, 2011</p>	
<p>KB4RC</p>	<p>I am on my third viewing and just realized the connection between episode 8 and this one. We always say Marlowe has a</p>

	<p>purpose and has a tendency to tie in previous episodes so here is my theory.</p> <p>In episode 8 you have the discussion with Beckett and Gates about Castle and Gates says he just throws out wild theories and cops don't have that luxury but must deal with facts. At the end of the episode they are once again talking about Castle and Kate says that is what makes him so good.</p> <p>In Kill Shot when Rick rushes in saying he figured out the dolls, Gates immediately says Mr Castle we don't have time for your theatrics. But he replies Captain just listen and then shows that is wild theories can be useful. After that not only does she listen to him but also asks him for his opinion. She is seeing first hand how useful he can be and I think this is what will probably save him in the upcoming Mayor episode.</p>
<p>3:43 am November 22, 2011</p>	<p>[Redacted]</p>
<p>KB4RC</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 95</p>	<p>Did anyone else tear up when Esposito says he is damaged goods and Kate says so am I?</p>
<p>3:48 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>lulu12345 India, Mumbai</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 639</p>	<p>KB4RC said: Did anyone else tear up when Esposito says he is damaged goods and Kate says so am I?</p> <p>He did not say he is damaged goods, he said the bad guys are! But all said and done, I want an ep, featuring on espo's military training! Would be a delicious ep what with jon becoming my newest crush!!</p> <p>-</p> <p>I so ship kate espo friendship pairing! I hope we see more meaningful scenes between them in the future!</p>
<p>4:07 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>KB4RC</p>	<p>lulu12345 said: KB4RC said:</p>

Opmerking [S487]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S488]: Fysieke reactie

 <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 95</p>	<p>Did anyone else tear up when Esposito says he is damaged goods and Kate says so am I?</p> <p>He did not say he is damaged goods, he said the bad guys are! But all said and done, I want an ep, featuring on espo's military training! Would be a delicious ep what with jon becoming my newest crush!!</p> <p>-</p> <p>I so ship kate espo friendship pairing! I hope we see more meaningful scenes between them in the future!</p> <p>When Esposito says he is damaged goods, he was talking about the sniper not himself. Sorry I figured if you had watched it, it would be obvious what I meant. Oops!</p>
<p>4:09 am November 22, 2011</p>  <p>KB4RC Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 95</p>	<p>Is it just me or did her bullet wound move? When we first see her it is near the right breast and when we see her pulling her shirt down it is closer to the left breast.</p>
<p>4:11 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>lulu12345 India, Mumbai</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 639</p>	<p>KB4RC said:-</p> <p>Is it just me or did her bullet wound move? When we first see her it is near the right breast and when we see her pulling her shirt down it is closer to the left breast.</p> <p>lol.</p>
<p>4:33 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>IfOnly Texas</p>	<p>Loved so many of the scenes – Kate's PTSD scenes, Kate and Espo in the property room, and Espo's face after shooting the sniper (relief at saving Kate and regret for having to kill a fellow military man). Stana was just amazing as usual. Her non-verbal acting is just a wonder to watch.</p> <p>Here are a couple of scenes I'll go into more detail.</p>

- Opmerking [S489]: Waardering makers
- Opmerking [S490]: Waardering aflevering



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 172

The scene in Kate's apartment when she examines her scars – as she walks into the scene the picture in the background is so reflective of what she has and continues to experience. The woman in the picture trying to flee from the attacking airplanes - trying to escape the turmoil and danger. Also reflective of Kate trying to escape her past. It illustrates how Kate's world is crashing down around her despite her best efforts. And, Kate seeing her reflection in the mirror while recalling and reflecting on her own shooting. First looking at her physical scars, then focusing on her eyes which are the windows to her soul. You see the pain in her eyes, her emotional scars. Just marvelous how the scene was filmed. The end scene of Kate and Rick at her desk. So much can be taken from it. Rick patiently waiting for Kate but still a little irked by her going it alone – not letting him in. Gently scolding her with his comments about waiting for his super-hero partner carrying the weight of the world. Letting her know it does not have to be that way. Letting her know they have come too far to go back to where they were at the beginning. He is saying I don't mind you being a mystery to me, but I won't continue being frozen out of important aspects of your life. He called her pretty – aaawww. The 100 coffees – double meaning. Illustrating he has been there for her for a long time. Also, he is owed the coffees – meaning he will still be around to collect. Kate got the meaning, you can see it on her face. She knows she was unfair and hurt him, thus the thank you for giving her space. The ALWAYS – yes, Kate I put your needs first, I'm still here for you, and I still love you. You are worth it. You are worth waiting for. The look on Kate's face after Rick turns to leave – expressing her gratitude for having him in her life, her need for him, her desire to be whole so as to have a future with him, and, yes, her love for him. Wanting to tell him so intensely, but doesn't want to blow it. The sadness at not being able to tell him now. The end therapy scene. She'll endure the painful therapy for her own healing, but, also, for Rick. He deserves a whole woman, and she is doing everything she can to give him that. A wonderful episode. There is so much more depth in all the characters this year. A joy to watch.

Edit:
~~I meant to mention another thing about the picture in Kate's apartment. There is a solar eclipse causing an obscuration of light resulting in a darkening sky. Representative of the darkness that came upon Kate's life because of her mother's murder. Kate's present and future are being eclipsed.~~

Opmerking [S491]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S492]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S493]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S494]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S495]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

	<p>(overshadowed) by her past. It is a very large picture again reflecting how big a problem her emotional trauma has influenced her life. So much symbolism in that picture.</p> <p>-</p> <p>Edit: Don't know what I did to make the post "shaded". Oh, well.</p>
<p>5:06 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>dauidsmom</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 296</p>	<p>Really loved the episode and almost everything has been said. Just wanted to add thoughts or maybe elaborate on them. Loved the looks between Castle and Esposito...even the whispered "thank you" to Esposito at the elevator when Castle and Beckett stayed behind. And when Beckett more or less "came back" at the coffee house – the look on Castle's face was pure love, to me!</p> <p>Loved the "always", of course. And I didn't at all feel that Castle was doing anything but teasing Beckett in the coffee scene — trying to get her into a lighter mood...and I think it not only worked but his "Always" helped convince her to tell the psychiatrist she was ready to move on.</p> <p>Only complaint (if you can call it that) is one that's been mentioned and I've had it for awhile — and that's the scar. I know she (Beckett) looked over her shoulder like there was something in her back area but I didn't see scars there. It's just not realistic to think there's only a bullet hole scar, though, since we all saw the doctors slicing her open, working on her heart, etc., in Episode one. Someone very close to me had heart surgery, and trust me, there's a big scar – very long. I know it wouldn't be particularly attractive on any character an actress might play and might limit any outfits she'd wear...but they should in my opinion either have dealt with the scar and shown that she had plastic surgery or something. Scars are mentioned by the psychiatrist...but it can't just be that bullet hole scar — Otherwise, the scenes in Episode 1 in the surgery room were unrealistic.</p>
<p>5:26 am November 22, 2011</p> <p>KB4RC</p>  <p>Hard Core Castle Groupie posts 95</p>	<p>The shooters sister says you can't give help if someone won't take it. Castle looks at Beckett and she drops her head. Kind of ties into the end when Castle states her being a super woman carrying the weight of the world. Not exact wording but could not remember. I love the little messages that they give us if we pay attention.</p>
<p>6:10 am November 22, 2011</p>	

Opmerking [S496]: Waardering aflevering

Opmerking [S497]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S498]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Cayenne
The Netherlands



Hard Core Castle
Groupie
posts 811



Seen the episode and I can't say a lot right now, just that it was absolutely 100% accurate on all the PTSD parts. From the frustration denial and pain to being overly alert on sounds and movement. It was all there. I cried through the entire episode. What a beautiful masterpiece.

The things that stand out for me right now:

- Kate telling her therapist that she was fine. I did the exact same thing when I was in denial about PTSD. That's the point when I started crying cause I knew how she felt and what path she was refusing to go down to (even tho it was inevitable).
- Kate holding the gun (her demon) for the first time. She was so vulnerable yet strong and willing to face it even though she was clearly terrified.
- When Castle told her "you got this". That was a lot of strength coming from him. He clearly wanted to follow her but chose what was right for her at that moment.
- Kate thanking him for giving her space and time to get through it. During that scene I REALLY had the feeling that she was not just talking about this case, but moreso talking about what happened since Knockout and her telling him that she can't dive until her walls come down. He's been really patient with her (actually he's always been) and I think she was thanking him for that, not just on the PTSD.

This episode pretty much confirmed the feeling that Castle knows that Kate heard his ILY, but he also knows what she's going through and understands that she can't act on it right now. IMO this scene confirmed that. Therefore I really don't think it will too much of a big deal once she confesses that she heard it.

~~ALWAYS, so glad it's back.~~

- The ending with Kate and her therapist. Again so much recognition. She's so afraid to live her life cause she'll feel guilty on living it while her mom is gone and the killer isn't caught. She wants to learn how to let go but she can't. I just wanted to give her a big hug and tell her that it's okay. (also her saying she's ready. I totally called it!)
- Everyone was great but: Stana for all the awards. So much emotion in her performance. It was all genuine.

As for there not being a promo for Cuffed: I think the promo was not released cause Kill Shot was a strong episode that deserves to stand on it's own atleast for a little while. If they would've put the Cuffed promo out, everyone would be talking about that since it's most likely just as epic as Kill Shot was. It would've taken some of the attention away from Kill Shot and I don't think it deserves that.

6:28 am
November 22, 2011

Opmerking [S499]: Fysieke reactie

Opmerking [S500]: Fysieke reactie

Opmerking [S501]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S502]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S503]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S504]: Voorspelling karakters

Opmerking [S505]: Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

Opmerking [S506]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid/intimiteit

Opmerking [S507]: Waardering makers

<p>spygirl</p>  <p>Castle Groupie posts 15</p>	<p>Absolutely brilliant episode! Everyone was completely on their game, especially SK. I agree with all the salient points, made so far about the ep. Can't wait to watch it again...</p>
---	---

My Nanna thought that **Richard Castle** and Kate Beckett were real people ..apparently i talk about [#Castle](#) a little too much! Ahaha

Opmerking [S508]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Real or not, I have a total crush on **Richard**

Opmerking [S509]: Intimiteit

I see your watching **Castle**, I am **Richard Castle**. Did you know that?

Opmerking [S510]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

I want to find a guy like **Richard Castle**. I want to find my one and done. Someone who will **love** me unconditionally. Girls we all want that

Opmerking [S511]: Intimiteit

One of the hottest chicks on tv and a guy you can live vicariously through?
What is there not to like from a guy's perspective?

Opmerking [S512]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

What is Castle to me?

I've had a few days now to recover from the emotions running through me from the finale. To be honest, I say "recover" when I should say "recovering", because I'm still not over what I saw on Monday. Today, I sit back and reflect on why I feel this way about this show in this manner. I mean, come on, it's just a TV show right? Just a bunch of actors and actresses being paid to say lines and act out parts that are handed to them, right? So why is it that when I look around the web, there is such an outpouring of raw emotion over "just a TV show"? For me, it boils down to why I watch the show to begin with.

Opmerking [S513]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

All around us today, we have a lot of forms of entertainment that are designed to take us from reality and into some fantasy world where logic, and sometimes scruples, do not exist. Then there are other shows that are there just for pure entertainment value only; no real added benefit to someone's life other than to make them laugh. The best form of show out there are "reality"

~~shows; shows that try to capture real people doing real things, yet somehow does not come close at all to mimicking actual lives.~~

So what is Castle? What kind of show is it? For me, it's one of those rare shows that actually tell a story in a way that makes it feel... I don't know... human? Like these are events and people that could actually exist in the real world. Even though the characters aren't real, the connection I feel toward them is. The show accurately portrays life; that in which life is messy, dirty, and hard, but has rays of light that can turn into a bright day. Watching the end of the finale was one of those rays of light. I can't wait to watch that ray of light become a bright shining day.

Opmerking [S514]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S515]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S516]: Waardering serie

- "What is 'Castle' to me?"

What *isn't* 'Castle' to me?!

It is my escape...

~~It is my source of wisdom and insight...~~

~~It has brought me into a community of fantastic people...~~

~~It is the reason I love Mondays...~~

~~It is the show I want to watch time and time again...~~

It is the family I like to think I belong to...

~~It is my addiction and my obsession...~~

~~It is my source of weekly frustration, laughs, and joy...~~

~~It is my religion...~~

It makes me happy. 🍷 🍷

Opmerking [S517]: Transportatie?

Opmerking [S518]: Intimiteit en jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

Opmerking [S519]: Emotionele reactie

Shena said

"What is 'Castle' to me?"

What *isn't* 'Castle' to me?!

~~It is my escape...~~

~~It is my source of wisdom and insight...~~

~~It has brought me into a community of fantastic people...~~

~~It is the reason I love Mondays...~~

~~It is the show I want to watch time and time again...~~

~~It is the family I like to think I belong to...~~

~~It is my addiction and my obsession...~~

~~It is my source of weekly frustration, laughs, and joy...~~

~~It is my religion...~~

~~It makes me happy.~~ 🍷 🍷

Shena... very well put... now that I think about it, it would probably be easier to list what it isn't 😊

For me, this is what Castle isn't:

-

~~It isn't a sexually charged show that has to use lewd and indecent comments for ratings~~

~~It isn't a show that has to add more drama just for ratings~~

~~It isn't a show that has to continually push the limits just for ratings~~

~~It isn't a show that has to use shock value just for ratings~~

I could go on!!!

~~Guess what I'm trying to get at... it's one of those shows that I won't mind my family watching with me and I don't have to have my finger on the fast forward button. Shows like that are rare these days!~~

- To me Castle is a cast and crew of the finest ever! Because of this I spend one hour each week in another world which gives me a badly needed break from everyday tension.
To me Castle is Stana Katic and the writers who brought the realism of PTSD to the people who needed it! I am one of them and I am forever grateful for it! It's been six years of trying to handle it on my own cause I am supposed to be the strong one in my family as the eldest. Now I am getting the treatment I need thanks to Kill Shot! Although my PTSD is more psychological than physical in cause – it's just as real as Becketts portrayal! Abig hug and thank you to both Stana and the writer!
To me Castle is a brilliant love story that I will enjoy watching forever if possible! I love every episode of it! Nathan and Molly and the rest of the cast are fantastic! To Seamus-I'm Irish American too! 😊

Today, I feel like pleasing you more than before
Today, I know what I want to do, but i don't know what for
To be living for you is all that I want to do

To be loving you it'll all be there when my dreams come true
Today, you'll make me say that I somehow have changed
Today, you'll look into my eyes I'm just not the same
To be any more than all I am would be a lie
I'm so full of love I could burst apart and start to cry
Today, everything you want, I swear it all will come true
Today, I realize how much I'm in love with you
With you standing there I could tell the world what it means to love
To go on from here I can't use words, they don't say enough
Please, please listen to me, its taken so long to come true
And it's all for you, all for you..... 🍷 🍷 🍷

Opmerking [S520]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Celticlady_51 said

To me Castle is a cast and crew of the finest ever! Because of this I spend one hour each week in another world which gives me a badly needed break from everyday tension.

Opmerking [S521]: Waardering makers

Opmerking [S522]: Transportatie

To me Castle is Stana Katic and the writers who brought the realism of PTSD to the people who needed it! I am one of them and I am forever grateful for it! It's been six years of trying to handle it on my own cause I am supposed to be the strong one in my family as the eldest. Now I am getting the treatment I need thanks to Kill Shot! Although my PTSD is more psychological than physical in cause – it's just as real as Becketts portrayal! Abig hug and thank you to both Stana and the writer!

Opmerking [S523]: Waardering makers

To me Castle is a brilliant love story that I will enjoy watching forever if possible! I love every episode of it! Nathan and Molly and the rest of the cast are fantastic! To Seamus-I'm Irish American too! 🍷

Opmerking [S524]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S525]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S526]: Waardering

Opmerking [S527]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

- I, too, have been spending the last few months trying to figure out how and why this show has gotten such a grip on my heart, my mind, and my life. To me, Castle is more than just a tv show. It's a community, a lifestyle, almost a way of living. I never have more than a passing interest in anything but for some reason this show captured me and now I just can't get enough. I love how this show makes you think, it doesn't lay everything out there, it's open to interpretation, it keeps you coming back for more. Every detail, every word, in this show is carefully crafted so that after you're finished watching it, you keep thinking about it. I agree with the earlier posting about what Castle "isn't" .. I love how it isn't a show driven by pushing the envelope, I love how I could recommend this show to anyone in my family and feel that I'm inviting them to watch one of the greatest love stories ever written. There's something so real about these characters, so real about this

Opmerking [S528]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S529]: Intimiteit

Opmerking [S530]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Opmerking [S531]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

show that you literally feel that you're in the middle of the case and relationships with them. I love Castle because it isn't just a tv show — it's a work of art, right down to the tiniest detail — and the Castle community has made it come alive.

Opmerking [S532]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Castle is such an addiction to me ... more so after the Season 4 finale. Since then I have become so invested in it, I'm not sure why, apart from knowing that it's such a great series with a great love story (the crime stories — I just love the twist and turn of them). I have been spending my nights at home, looking through the internet for all things related to Castle/Nathan/Stana — forums, tumblr sites, youtube videos. I think I have gone quite mad! No other TV series have had this effect on me in the past.

Opmerking [S533]: Emotionele reactie

Such great performances and chemistry from the two leads, so much so that I feel like I'm really looking in onto a real relationship at times. I believe that a Richard Castle and Kate Beckett do exist and they evoke such emotions in me; happiness, sadness, frustration and such joy when they finally got together. I'm not quite sure what is Castle to me ... I do know that I can't quite do without tuning in each week. Really? A TV series? I need help ... LOL!

Opmerking [S534]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S535]: Verwarring realimse

Opmerking [S536]: Emotionele reactie

Opmerking [S537]: Verwarring realimse

What the world needs now is love, sweet Caskett love

wmw said

Castle is such an addiction to me ... more so after the Season 4 finale. Since then I have become so invested in it, I'm not sure why, apart from knowing that it's such a great series with a great love story (the crime stories — I just love the twist and turn of them). I have been spending my nights at home, looking through the internet for all things related to Castle/Nathan/Stana — forums, tumblr sites, youtube videos. I think I have gone quite mad! No other TV series have had this effect on me in the past.

Such great performances and chemistry from the two leads, so much so that I feel like I'm really looking in onto a real relationship at times. I believe that a Richard Castle and Kate Beckett do exist and they evoke such emotions in me; happiness, sadness, frustration and such joy when they finally got together. I'm not quite sure what is Castle to me ... I do know that I can't quite do without tuning in each week. Really? A TV series? I need help ... LOL!

- WMW, You don't need help! We love all OCDers in here! 😊 A lot of us do the exact same thing and feel the same way about the show! It's

more than just a TV program to so many of us, and not many can explain why. Heck, I've watched "Always" 13 times already and it hasn't even been a full week since it aired! Ever feel like chatting with other addicts who are also very friendly (and found each other through Castle and this website only a few months ago), feel free to pop by Trueheart's Castledom forum and join the chat! 😊

Opmerking [S538]: Intimiteit

Shena said

wmw said

Castle is such an addiction to me ... more so after the Season 4 finale. Since then I have become so invested in it, I'm not sure why, apart from knowing that it's such a great series with a great love story (the crime stories — I just love the twist and turn of them). I have been spending my nights at home, looking through the internet for all things related to Castle/Nathan/Stana — forums, tumblr sites, youtube videos. I think I have gone quite mad! No other TV series have had this effect on me in the past.

Such great performances and chemistry from the two leads, so much so that I feel like I'm really looking in onto a real relationship at times. I believe that a Richard Castle and Kate Beckett do exist and they evoke such emotions in me; happiness, sadness, frustration and such joy when they finally got together. I'm not quite sure what is Castle to me ... I do know that I can't quite do without tuning in each week. Really? A TV series? I need help ... LOL!

WMW, You don't need help! We love all OCDers in here! 😊 A lot of us do the exact same thing and feel the same way about the show! It's more than just a TV program to so many of us, and not many can explain why. Heck, I've watched "Always" 13 times already and it hasn't even been a full week since it aired! Ever feel like chatting with other addicts who are also very friendly (and found each other through Castle and this website only a few months ago), feel free to pop by Trueheart's Castledom forum and join the chat! 😊

Thanks so much....will definitely pop by!

What the world needs now is love, sweet Caskett love

- Thank you for sharing this. My little brother came back from Afghanistan with what was called "light PTSD", but I know how much he has struggled with that. Will be praying for you!

Opmerking [S539]: Persoonlijke informatie delen

Castle to me is not an addiction. It's just a healthy escape for me :-)

Opmerking [S540]: Transportatie

I just love the show and have watched from day one. A great break from reality and my busy life. I have 5 kids, and I am also a foster parent for babies. I love the chance to delve into a great TV show that provides a great sanity break for my mind, body, and soul.

Opmerking [S541]: Persoonlijke informatie delen

NF is hilarious too. Love to watch a great actor. Stana has certainly blossomed since S1. I enjoy her in the show as well as the whole supporting cast.

Opmerking [S542]: Waardering makers

I have a lot of other shows I watch too

Obviously it's Detective Kate Beckett. It always has been. I think I identified with her right away because of the way she treated Castle. It was very much "I will take non of this crap you're trying to have" type of attitude and I loved it. And now as I've watched the character develop I think she is honestly one of the strongest females characters on TV. She's been the one I've consistently seen refuse help, and not that that is a sign of strength, but it just shows me the type of person she is. And I identify a bit with that too. I haven't had the type of tragic life she has, but I hide a lot of my feelings and keep people at a distance for fear of abandonment and disappointment and it's just nice to see someone struggling with that as well.

Opmerking [S543]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S544]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S545]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Richard Castle :-) Some people work for a living as Beckett would answer :-))

Opmerking [S546]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Luv u Castle!!!!

Opmerking [S547]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

We know those were for Beckett, but what kind of coffee do you drink?

Opmerking [S548]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

This gives me new ideas on what to write off next year. Thanks, Rick.

Opmerking [S549]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

And Richard, why are you buying lattes when there is a perfectly good espresso machine in house now.... which I am sure was also deductible?

Opmerking [S550]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Don't complain about latte... btw, did you talk to Kate? stop behaving like a child.

Opmerking [S551]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Jerry Lail I wonder what the real Richard Castle looks like... I imagine he can deduct from his taxes, having a Nathan Fillion impersonate him I guess this is reverse ghost writing... Richard Castle is the real writer (if he really exist) and Natan Fillion plays him on tv, and represents him in all images I have seen... did he exist before ABC started the CASTLE TV show?

Opmerking [S552]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S553]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Richard Castle exists! Ask the other authors he plays poker with. I just got done reading "Naked Heat" on my Nook and loved!

Opmerking [S554]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Guys, Richard Castle is a fictional character and they release the books under his name (I think its really cool). Nathan Fillion plays him on the show Castle. If you have watched every episode of Castle multiple times and all of the interviews and what not.. you would know.

Opmerking [S555]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

I love Castle♥ Don't let Beckett know that your daily heartfelt gesture became a tax write off! Chicks don't dig that! Lol

Opmerking [S556]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

For the honor of parents everywhere YOU MUST WIN RICK!!!

Opmerking [S557]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

This is WAR!! Rooting for you Rick!

Opmerking [S558]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

She'll be back Richard, all children (college bound adults too) return home for their once a year supply of peeps, I know, its been happening to me now for 5 years! Still haven't figured out why they can't buy them for themselves, lol!

Opmerking [S559]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

What are you doing!?!?! A flight attendant? Seriously talk to Beckett!!! Please... save us all.....

Opmerking [S560]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Rick Castle I know and love....the one who always tells his daughter the truth no matter what....come clean with Beckett NOW...ya'll need to talk!!!

Opmerking [S561]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S562]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I don't like how you're treating Beckett. She really does love you, and you need to give her the chance to tell you. She's better than that stupid blonde in your car!

Opmerking [S563]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Richard Castle, Would Just like to say.

You're Awesome.

Opmerking [S564]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Only someone like you could rhyme a tweet and look AAAAWSOOOME!!!!!! Congratulations to Ryan & Jenny! :)

Opmerking [S565]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Why oh why did he pick Jenny over me...?

Opmerking [S566]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Now its about time you marry Beckett !!! And have lil castle babies :)

Opmerking [S567]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

Maybe one day we will be hearing wedding bells for a certain detective and her partner in crime? Hopefully both parties won't be looking at which nursing home would be best for a honeymoon by the time it happens though!

Opmerking [S568]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Finally. Give them Both My Regards and wish them Luck for me.

Opmerking [S569]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S570]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congratulations we'll see how they fare

Opmerking [S571]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congrats Ryan and Jenny. It's been great watching your relationship grow. From the dating phase to the amazing proposal by Ryan all the way to now as newlyweds. Hope you two have a great honeymoon.

Opmerking [S572]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Sorry, but I don't think Beckett is the marrying kind. I thought the show overall last night was disappointing after the long break. Wish they had come back with a real blockbuster episode instead of that lame story. The best part was the friends of the victim who described their pick-up 'system.'
Ha Ha!

Opmerking [S573]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Third time is a charm Castle, get moving!

Opmerking [S574]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Congrats Jen & Ryan . Ok Kate & Rick get the fever !

Opmerking [S575]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hope you finally bought that wedding gift--remember china is always a good gift!

Opmerking [S576]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

So did Esposito(The Situation) have a good time?!?!?!?

Opmerking [S577]:

We like having you and Beckett back in our family rooms!

Opmerking [S578]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

So Beckett is real?

Opmerking [S579]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Glad to hear your doing good ricky. Hope to hear from ya more oftain again. Its been a boring time without you.

Opmerking [S580]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I've started reading my copy! Also got the Derrick Storm graphic novel--it was good. Thank you for the additions to my library, Mr Castle.

Opmerking [S581]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Yay! You're back! You've been missed ♥

Opmerking [S582]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

great! loved the acknowledgements :) (funny thing is, when I was in love the first time, all those songs and poems DID make sense all of a sudden ;)

Opmerking [S583]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

Nice to have you back on my Facebook feed, Mr. Castle--even if my Facebook feed is all wonky now with their changes.

Opmerking [S584]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

We love you, Castle!!!!

Opmerking [S585]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Ugh. Reading that was like a knife to the heart.

Opmerking [S586]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Sorry to here about that hope everything ok take what ever time you need we will still be here when you get back.

Opmerking [S587]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hang in there.

Opmerking [S588]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

hope to hear some good news... we are with you Rick...

Opmerking [S589]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I agree with one of the posters above...most of my best friends are fictional. Also, she's not dead.

Opmerking [S590]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

Aww Rick, never fear, Kate's a tough bird, she'll make it out of this ordeal, she just can't leave in the middle of this unfinished business can she ? And I mean ALL of them, unfinished businesses !!! Besides, you know what she'd say ? 'Butch up a bit, Castle' ! Now go watch over her, just come back whenever with good news, that's all that matters now !

Opmerking [S591]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Don't worry! Our thoughts are with U and Kate <333 We'll wait for U.. always ;D

Opmerking [S592]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

my goodness, hoping youre ok, were all upset over finale....i really think you two need to acknowledge your feelings

Opmerking [S593]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Big hug Castle! Come back soon!

Opmerking [S594]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Dont be away too long we will miss you.x

Opmerking [S595]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

We all support you. Come back soon. You are in my prayers.

Opmerking [S596]:

I hope everything's ok. :: HUGGLES::

Opmerking [S597]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Aww, Rick. Hope you've by her side this whole time. :)

Opmerking [S598]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I know there won't be "news" for a while, but anxiously await update of some sort when it's appropriate. She's a fighter, and with you and the rest of her family in her corner, she'll recover -- though I'm sure the scars (of all time) will run deep.

Opmerking [S599]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Rick, while Kate is still in a coma, you could keep us updated with her status? We can help you get through her shooting. hugs

Opmerking [S600]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Miss you every day more..

Opmerking [S601]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hoping for the best ... sending good thoughts & prayers your way. :)

Opmerking [S602]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

see, she's fine... but I wonder if your heart feels better :(Get some trumpets and blow those walls away ;)

Opmerking [S603]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

why not ? OH MY GOSH HES NOT GOING TO BE TWITERING FOR A WHILE

Opmerking [S604]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I know she will recover. She has too. You and she have to find out who is behind this. There is someone higher up than Montgomery pulling the strings. And maybe, just maybe you can clear him as well.

Opmerking [S605]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Rick, take whtever time tht u need... We, your fans, Understand and love u and Beckett lots...

Opmerking [S606]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Take all the time you need. Sorry you're going through a difficult time. Your fans are always here for u.

Opmerking [S607]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

dear richard we are with you both- with bated breath we wait with you too

Opmerking [S608]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hugs and love to you.

Opmerking [S609]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Are you talking about what happened with Beckett because that was a while ago. If not, then what happened?

Opmerking [S610]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Prayers and warm comforting thoughts going out to you from Chicago!

Opmerking [S611]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Don't lose her Richard! The good ones are hard to find!

Opmerking [S612]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hang in there! No matter how bad things get it can always get better. We're all here for you.

Opmerking [S613]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Rick, You know she's not really dead, she can't be.... They didn't even let you in on the secret... They have to let the shooter thinks she dead so he can be caught... They couldn't let you in on it because you are a chatter box and would let the cat out of the bag too easily. Don't worry. Tweet or FB all you want everything will be fine in the FALL

Opmerking [S614]: Fantasie

You people need some serious help.

Opmerking [S615]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

Anyone down for a manhunt? Let's get whoever shot Beckett and exact revenge for Montgomery too!

Opmerking [S616]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

I feel so bad for you. Do you need a hug?

Opmerking [S617]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Wonder how many "friends" think this is a real person's account?

Opmerking [S618]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

My thoughts and prayers are with you and everyone else during this hard time. ♥

Opmerking [S619]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

RC hang in there. KB needs you now. We understand and look forward to hearing from you when things are better

Opmerking [S620]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I don't know if I should be liking this status, I mean Beckett was shot, that's not something to like! Anyway, we all feel for you Castle, it breaks our hearts as well!

Opmerking [S621]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

We love you and miss you ♥ Hope Beckett does come out of this with no scars....and you tooooooooooooooo ♥

Opmerking [S622]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Whatever it is, you are in our prayers.

Opmerking [S623]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

A puppy dies everytime someone says a prayer for a fictional character...

Opmerking [S624]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

Thoughts and prayers sent your way.

Opmerking [S625]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Im hoping it was all a dream

Opmerking [S626]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Thoughts, prayers & support coming your way from all of to you!

Opmerking [S627]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hope you come back soon... My heart aches for you. My thoughts are with you... I'm self-centered but I have to say I miss you so much already...

Opmerking [S628]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Sending love and wishes for a speedy recovery your way darling.

Opmerking [S629]: Persoonlijke info delen

stay strong big guy!!

Opmerking [S630]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

YOU WILL SURVIVE THIS . IT WILL MAKE YOU STRONGER . AND OUT FOR JUSTICE ,WONDER WHAT MESSES YOU WILL GET INTO TRYING TO DO THIS.

Opmerking [S631]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Please, just tell us she's recovering, please!!

Opmerking [S632]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I'll keep you both in my prayers. Stay strong because she'll need you when she wakes up. Maybe you should read to her.

Opmerking [S633]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

So hope that you are well & such, so sorry to hear about heartbreaking news. Do take care & such.. Cheeres, Luv, snuggles, etc..

Opmerking [S634]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Opmerking [S635]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Sometimes the people we care about a lot are fictional. Doesn't make them any less important. Most of my best friends are fictional.

Opmerking [S636]: Verwarring werkelijkheid

I know it's difficult for you, but please keep us posted on her condition.

Opmerking [S637]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I'm so sorry, Castle. I know you're barely hanging on, but in the meantime, please don't drink yourself into oblivion. I don't want to hear about you landing yourself in rehab and settling for Natalie Rhodes with her Nikki Heat wig. Stay strong!

Opmerking [S638]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Thoughts and prayers are with Kate. Tell her to get well....I want to see a wedding!!

Opmerking [S639]: Fantasie

You have to be strong, and fight this battle a little more... it will end happily!

Opmerking [S640]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Our sincerest thoughts and prayers are with you.

Opmerking [S641]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I hope she's ok!

Opmerking [S642]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Heartbroken... Again ♥ Take good care of her

Opmerking [S643]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

hug hope things get better

Opmerking [S644]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Here's to hoping that Beckett is okay. ♥

Opmerking [S645]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

This just made me sad about the whole thing all over again :(

Opmerking [S646]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Be strong Rick. We love ya.

Opmerking [S647]: Emotionele reactie

Take all the time you need. Do what you've got to do. We'll be here.

Opmerking [S648]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hang in there Rick. I have faith things will turn out ok.

Opmerking [S649]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Hurry back when Beckett is well!! :)

Opmerking [S650]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

Take all the time you need,ricky.

Opmerking [S651]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I guess that detective died, huh? Send her family my regards. Oh wait, you're fictional...

Opmerking [S652]: Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

I'm finally taking time to catch up on Twitter and I found a tweet from Marta Evry, who did some of the editing for Always. She says - "The first time I watched Nathan's dailies where he says, "I'm right here!" it just broke my heart. Best acting he's done on the show." Gotta love a woman who appreciates our PS!

Opmerking [S653]: Wijzen op werkelijkheid

Opmerking [S654]:

Opmerking [S655]: Fandom

Nathan fan, thanks for sharing that info! I *heart* this woman! She's a smart cookie. That scene broke my heart too. When he said "I'm right here..." I actually started to cry. ::sniff::

Opmerking [S656]: Fysieke reactie

I started to cry during the argument scene, too. Nathan hit it out of the ballpark. He is such a terrific actor. That scene was just heartbreaking. I sure hope he gets nominated for an Emmy. He so deserves it. How can one man be so frigging perfect?

Opmerking [S657]: Fysieke reactie

Oh my gosh, between Alexis' grad speech and that amazing song. I got a little teary. I don't remember the last time I've gotten weepy over anything, let alone a TV show!

Opmerking [S658]: Fysieke reactie

Maybe it was just that both the song and the speech struck a chord with me, as the majority of my friends are graduating college this year, but man was that an amazing scene!!!!!!!

Opmerking [S659]: Koppelen aan eigen leven

The scene in Beckett's apartment was beyond incredible. Nathan's acting was outstanding! I loved the fact that he got angry about why should she trust him!

Opmerking [S660]: Waardering makers

That scene was perfectly written, directed and acted to address the core of their problems. Brilliant! And made me cry!

Opmerking [S661]: Fysieke reactie

Opmerking [S662]: Waardering makers

There was a lot of contrasting which I loved. When Marlowe said emotional, he wasn't kidding and yup, I freely admitted I cried more than once. And when I get home from my event this evening, I'll re-watch....and cry again.

Opmerking [S663]: Fysieke reactie

Stana Katic, wow. She showed us a woman at her worst and her best. Less afraid to be vulnerable with Castle in the beginning of the epi. Then she plays the BAMF to a tee in interrogation and on that rooftop. The non-reaction to Castle's tearful plea in the apartment scene captures the worst of Beckett. So myopic still that she can't accept what he's offering. Perhaps in this episode more than any other, she showed us so many of the layers and colors to the character of Beckett. The expressiveness of her face, her ability to shed tears that hurt to watch, and the way she transformed Beckett in that end scene was just stunning to watch. She dropped all of the Beckett hard edges without dropping the essence of Beckett. Katic displayed beautifully what we see so little of in female characters on TV or in the movies. A strong, flawed, driven, and in the end self aware, tender, loving, actual woman. Just stunning to watch.

Opmerking [S664]: Waardering makers

Obvious kudos to the writers for a beautiful story. That said, Fillion and Katic took their characters off the page and gave them such dimension in this episode that I felt compelled to comment. I tip my hat to you Mr. Fillion and to you Ms. Katic and thank you both for a truly entertaining performance.

Opmerking [S665]: Waardering makers

Wow. This is perfect. Your post brought tears to my eyes. I agree 100% that Nathan and Stana were absolutely amazing in this episode.

Opmerking [S666]: Waardering makers

I mean seriously...I'm trying to remember the last time 2 characters on a TV show have moved me this way.

Opmerking [S667]: Emotionele reactie

They're always very good, but last night they made me laugh, cry, be frustrated and elated - all in the same episode. I went to bed thinking about them (and my heart was racing), and they were the first thought on my mind when I woke up today. Sounds crazy I know, but it's true.

Opmerking [S668]: Fysieke reactie

After last night, I am in love.

Opmerking [S669]: Intimiteit

When he was at Becketts apartment I wanted to cry for him. When you can forget they are acting, then they are doing a superb job.

Opmerking [S670]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

When she came TO HIM for a change, I loved his reaction. Complete and total shock. Played to absolute perfection. As I said, I am in love.

Opmerking [S671]: Intimiteit

I'm pretty sure we're all a little bit in *love* with Nathan!! Okay, maybe more than a little. Maybe a lot. Like, maybe we're obsessed. Just kidding. Or not. You decide. HA HA HA

Opmerking [S672]: Fandom

You're definitely not alone! The argument in Kate's apartment just broke my heart.

Opmerking [S673]: Emotionele reactie

When Rick said he brings her coffee every day to see her smile, I thought I was gonna die!

Opmerking [S674]: Emotionele reactie

And when he told her he's been right here beside her for four years, waiting for her to see that he's so much more than just her "partner"? GAH!! I started to cry!

Opmerking [S675]: Fysieke reactie

But I was so happy that he didn't hold back and told her everything. Everything. No more secrets. The entire scene made me a big 'ol puddle of goo.

Opmerking [S676]: Emotionele reactie

I wanted to hug Rick and tell him everything was going to be OK.

Opmerking [S677]: Intimiteit

Nathan is such a talented actor!

Opmerking [S678]: Waardering makers

I lost it with that scene in Kate's apartment. I had tears running down my face and I was sniffling and shaking. Nathan was so great there with his voice quavering and his eyes tearing up to nearly spilling over. But what really did me in was his chin quaking. More tears on my part.

Opmerking [S679]: Fysieke reactie

Come on. If I was Kate at that point, sure I'd have been upset, angry at what he kept from me, and like he betrayed me and I've have said what she did. But, at that point, seeing the look on his face, let alone what he said, I think I'd have lost it and starting crying.

Opmerking [S680]: Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

Nathan and Stana hit it out of the park on that scene as well as that kiss. I sat astounded with the kiss, almost teared up out of happiness, but I was speechless until the credits ran.

Opmerking [S681]: Fysieke reactie

I completely agree; when Nathan's voice cracked with the tears in his eyes, I had to do some fast blinking to stop my tears.

Opmerking [S682]: Fysieke reactie

Guys aren't "supposed to" cry, but I get caught up in these emotional moments.....I can't help get emotional over Kate's raw emotions when she goes to Rick.....what man in love could refuse her showing those true deep feelings, finally..... reaction showed how well they (Nathan/Stana) told us the story.....

Opmerking [S683]: Fysieke reactie

Bijlage 3: Definitieve categorisering

Verwarring werkelijkheid

- So..I'm wondering whether Kate at this point (S3E11) thinks/knows that she is in love with RC or is she unsure? (R1)
- I think most people here have an opinion about what they think is going on with Kate and how she feels about Castle. I think the point of Tyler starting this thread, was because there was a question about what others think about this issue, what Kate's actions/words, or lack thereof, say about her feelings toward Castle. And yes it does matter if she does love him, but is unable or afraid to share her feelings. What's behind it? Why? (R3)
- So people post on, whether Beckett has accepted or not accepted her feelings for Castle. And some argument on why we believe it to be true. Please note that, our reasoning are our personal belief. The true state of her acceptance have not been reveal. (and yeah.. everyone here knows that Beckett's already in love with Castle no doubt about that but does the Becks the character know it ?) (R69)
- I am just asking whether Beckett the character has accepted that she loves the guy. Because when you talk about having a wall around your heart, it's being afraid to love someone. I see it as her saying, 'hey, if i love someone completely like i did my mum. what if i loose them?' thus the reason for the wall to exist. (R1)
- lol..... ok here's the thing about the responses. Yeah, we as the audience know that Beckett is already head over heels in love with castle. But my question is more on whether Beckett the character knows that she is already in love with the guy? (R1)
- There is absolutely no doubt in my mind that she is already in love with him. But based on the story line has the character accepted that she's already in love with the guy? (R1)
- I loved the way Castle took care of her without her knowing. The scene when he says thank you to Esposito was classic. How he was his normal intrusive self but helped her when he could. Then how he asked Espo to help her and he showed her the gun that had shot her. (R39)
- My Nanna thought that **Richard Castle** and Kate Beckett were real people ..apparently i talk about **#Castle** a little too much! Ahaha (R70)
- I see your watching **Castle**, I am **Richard Castle**. Did you know that? (R71)
- Today, I feel like pleasing you more than before
Today, I know what I want to do, but i don't know what for
To be living for you is all that I want to do

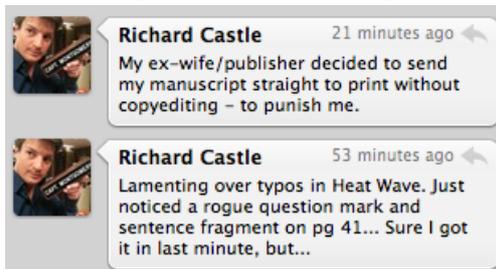
To be loving you it'll all be there when my dreams come true
Today, you'll make me say that I somehow have changed
Today, you'll look into my eyes I'm just not the same
To be any more than all I am would be a lie
I'm so full of love I could burst apart and start to cry
Today, everything you want, I swear it all will come true
Today, I realize how much I'm in love with you
With you standing there I could tell the world what it means to love
To go on from here I can't use words, they don't say enough
Please, please listen to me, its taken so long to come true

And it's all for you, all for you..... 🍷 🍷 😊 (R72)

- I love how I could recommend this show to anyone in my family and feel that I'm inviting them to watch one of the greatest love stories ever written. There's something so real about these characters, so real about this show that you literally feel that you're in the middle of the case and relationships with them. (R65)
- Such great performances and chemistry from the two leads, so much so that I feel like I'm really looking in onto a real relationship at times. I believe that a Richard Castle and Kate Beckett do exist and they evoke such emotions in me; happiness, sadness, frustration and such joy when they finally got together. I'm not quite sure what is Castle to me ... I do know that I can't quite do without tuning in each week. Really? A TV series? I need help ... LOL! (R66)
- Jerry Lail I wonder what the real Richard Castle looks like... I imagine he can deduct from his taxes, having a Nathan Fillion impersonate him I guess this is reverse ghost writing... (R73)
- Richard Castle is the real writer (if he really exist) and Natan Fillion plays him on tv, and represents him in all images I have seen... did he exist before ABC started the CASTLE TV show? (R74)
- Richard Castle exists! Ask the other authors he plays poker with. I just got done reading "Naked Heat" on my Nook and loved! (R75)
- I don't like how you're treating Beckett. She really does love you, and you need to give her the chance to tell you. She's better than that stupid blonde in your car! (R76)
- So Beckett is real? (R77)
- I agree with one of the posters above...most of my best friends are fictional. Also, she's not dead. (R78)

- Does anyone else automatically read them as the 'real' people and not who they are in the book LOL I've been doing it all morning. Loving Rook already, he's so going to give Nikki hell LOL (R32)
- Yep, I did ;) Just had to remember, Heat = Beckett, Rook = Castle, Ochoa = Esposito, and Raley = Ryan :P "Richard Castle" didn't give a whole lot of physical description of the characters, so I kind of think we were supposed to do that... Not that it matters, I probably would've done it anyway. 😊 (R33)
- I so love the pic of Rick on the back dust jacket too, really nice pic ;)(R32)
- I really do love the sense of realism publishing Heat Wave has brought to the show, it's great. (R79)
- I couldn't really stop myself from always imagining Richard Castle sitting in his office writing that book on his laptop. By the way did these lines we saw Rick write in the first episode of the first season make their way into the book? I have not found them, did anybody else maybe? (R55)
- What I was wondering about: He writes that Nikki Heat is taking the subway to work, is that fiction or does that indicate that Beckett takes the subway to work as well? There was more that I was wondering about if Rick wrote that in his book cause Beckett was doing that as well. But I can't think of anything else in the moment. (R55)
- What? They had a different author write the book? Is that confirmed? Wow... I didn't know that. I thought that he wrote the book and is going to write the next book as well. (R80)
- So what does that mean? It means that sometimes human beings are dumb and fail to follow through with things they should. It means that relationships aren't usually products of Harlequin Press, and sometimes, we do things for understandable and justifiable reasons that make people angry, none of which we should apologize for. More than anything else though, it means that Beckett and Castle aren't the couple we sometimes wish they were, and neither one needs to apologize for that either. (R25)
- That is certainly romantic and might even happen to other people in the real world, but that clearly is not Castle and Beckett. What's worse is that she can't even tell Castle that they might have a chance later on like she does at the swings because it would be wholly unfair to Josh, and though that might be alright with most us in the fandom, that's not who Kate is either (R25)
- Life works like that sometimes, and the last thing that any of us should ever do is apologize for being human. Being human is a gift, not a curse... (R25)
- Great acting by Esposito and Beckett (R81)

- But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. (R17)
- It's their story, not mine. (R17)
- We see only the important selected few moments of their hours and hours together in the TV episodes. Maybe 2 minutes or less of every hour. What are they doing the rest of the time? (R82)
- These two have spent at least a couple thousand hours together over the last 4 years, maybe more, and that's assuming Castle is only with Beckett on a case for 25% of a normal working year and someplace else the rest of the time. That's a lot of time to be next to each other and not bringing "it" up. (R83)
- It does help to spin out a TV series, it's true; but that doesn't make it total fantasy. (R26)
- Oh, and in reference to the whole issue with the typos, looks like "Castle" finally got his hands on a copy and is tweeting about it: (To those unfamiliar with twitter, the most recent tweet is on top, so it reads bottom to top)



(R33)

- By the way did these lines we saw Rick write in the first episode of the first season make their way into the book? I have not found them, did anybody else maybe? (R55)
- I'm proud of Castle for sticking it out. He takes her good and bad and loves her just the same. He's willing to give her the time to do this the way she feel is best; that makes me willing to do the same. (R17)
- I thought Beckett was perfect! I loved that she freaked out when the gun was pointed at her both times and that it took a little effort to regain her confidence. (R23)
- Great acting by Esposito and Beckett but I did not expect Castle to play much of a part in this and not only did he help Beckett through this without her knowing, he also actually got Gates to not only listen to his theory but also had the working the smart board with him. (R39)

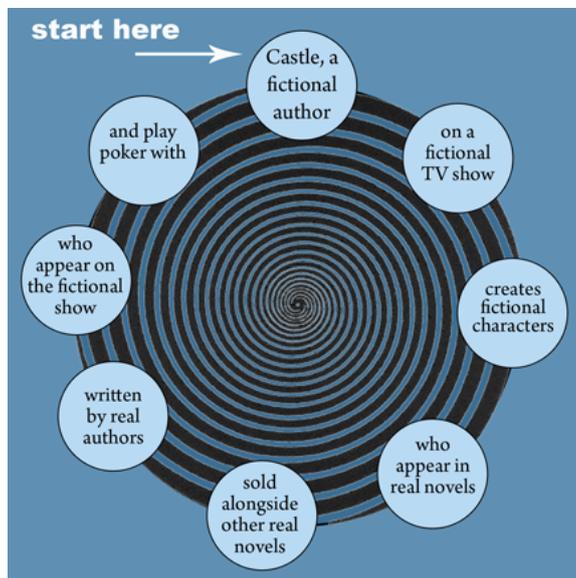
- Congratulations! May you be blessed with many happy years together. Remember 'never go to bed angry'. (R84)
- Please throw the bouquet to Kate (R44)
- I believe that a Richard Castle and Kate Beckett do exist and they evoke such emotions in me; happiness, sadness, frustration and such joy when they finally got together. (R66)
- You know what I wonder? I wonder what it's like to actually be the one who nearly dies... (R25)
- Rick, You know she's not really dead, she can't be.... They didn't even let you in on the secret... They have to let the shooter think she's dead so he can be caught... They couldn't let you in on it because you are a chatter box and would let the cat out of the bag too easily. Don't worry. Tweet or FB all you want everything will be fine in the FALL (R85)
- I'm so sorry, Castle. I know you're barely hanging on, but in the meantime, please don't drink yourself into oblivion. I don't want to hear about you landing yourself in rehab and settling for Natalie Rhodes with her Nikki Heat wig. Stay strong! (R86)
- *"There's something so real about these characters, so real about this show that you literally feel that you're in the middle of the case and relationships with them."* (R358)

Wijzen op werkelijkheid

- (and for me the only reason that those two aren't already planning their next holiday together is that this is a tv show, not some walls or being afraid to love or whatever. (R9)
- I've been reading the discussions posted by all and i believe we can argue the point on whether or not Beckett has accepted that she is in love with Castle both ways. Since it has not been reveal either way. We don't know for sure she has fully accepted that she is indeed in love with Castle. Hopefully, we will get more insight with the next few episode. I love Castle but it does moves a bit too slowly sometime. (R1)
- Obviously, this is all speculation on our parts as AM is the only one who really knows, but isn't that the point of this forum, to share our speculations on this show, the storyline, and character development? (R3)
- Today, I sit back and reflect on why I feel this way about this show in this manner. I mean, come on, it's just a TV show right? Just a bunch of actors and actresses being paid to say lines and act out parts that are handed to them, right? So why is it that when I look around the web, there is such an outpouring of raw emotion over "just a TV show"? For me, it boils down to why I watch the show to begin with. (R63)
- Guys, Richard Castle is a fictional character and they release the books under his name (I think its really cool). Nathan Fillion plays him on the show Castle. If you have watched every episode of Castle multiple times and all of the interviews and what not.. you would know. (R87)
- Wonder how many "friends" think this is a real person's account? (R88)
- A puppy dies everytime someone says a prayer for a fictional character... (R89)
- I guess that detective died, huh? Send her family my regards. Oh wait, you're fictional... (R90)
- And I think this is exactly where we see more of this relationship than actually exists on screen, we have no idea if Beckett really and truly cared for Josh and we have no idea what her exact feelings are for Castle (in fact, we only know that Castle has truly fallen in love because he said the words), but more than that, Beckett has made it clear since the beginning of season 3 that she is going to give her and Josh a shot. (R25)
- And i believe i have watch Castle as many times as any other Castle junkie out there. And having a different opinion on a subject does not mean I'm watching or listening to it any less than you have. I've watched it, I've analyze it and perceive it differently. That's all. You can have 3 sets of people analyzing a bunch of numbers and all 3 groups coming up with different conclusions on the same numbers. And the human emotion is way more complex. But hey, i do enjoy reading every other perspective there is out there. (R1)

- Hi all – I believe that Beckett does love Castle – pure & simple. Leaving out the fact that this is a TV show where the producers have an interest in spinning it out for the entire story arc , my opinion is that the situation set up is very credible for the characters as they are developed in the milieu that they live in. (R26)
- However guys there is no need to be soooo gloomy about it..... (R1)
- May you be as happy together as you are in real life x (R91)
- Thanks for sharing real pics to support the storyline of the show. I hope filming this episode allowed you to relive a joyous moment in your lives. (R92)
- oh wow!!! i've been waiting for this ever since he proposed in last season. finally, its here!! but please don't present a hitch in it... let them get married happily... i want them to be happy. not to mention, they are so adorable together. i love det. Ryan and i wish you and your fiance best of luck for future (of course its metaphorically. i'm not crazy enough to think they're real).Have fun!!! (R93)
- P.S. who's @seamusdever? Is he the priest? The wedding videographer? Wait, is he the best man?... ;) (R94)
- The discussion we are having here is on her not readiness to voice the same words to Castle. We questioned her love for Castle because the words used by AM in his interviews for Beckett's feeling towards Castle was describe as 'strong feelings' and not love. (R1)
- Stana did say that Kate is in love with Castle in her interviews, the problem is the word AM use in his is "really care for". (R1)
- During some interview in end season 2 Stana said something along the line that you really really like the guy and you think that he feels the same way and you wanted to explore that. I can't say its a conclusive thing that Beckett knows that she is already in love with Castle. (R1)
- In terms of giving more insight into Beckett, I suppose it's possible, but unless the author talked to Marlowe and the writers to get additional info on backstory for that purpose, I would guess not. Although, the writers could certainly use material from Heat Wave in the future when they give more backstory on Beckett. In Rose for Everafter, Beckett tells Kyra that the book is mostly a product of Castle's overactive imagination. (R34)
- I think Kate trusts Castle now more than she's ever done before, but she's making a real adult decision (like Stana said) (R41)
- Being flawed like that doesn't make her necessarily complex but gives the role more credibility. People in TV shows usually are two dimensional which makes it for the audience harder to relate to. With credible roles there is simply more room for imagination and the audience can fill in the blanks in their own way. We people here spend countless pages just doing that. (R14)

- I feel as though puzzling this out requires a logical/scientific approach rather than the writerly one I am more accustomed to assuming. I'm used to approaching novels and even movies and TV shows as a writer – cringing at bad lines, silently complimenting (and envying) the writers when they pull off something particularly clever – but when it comes to Castle, I keep going over and over the pieces of reality and fiction, trying to put them together like pieces of a puzzle, as though there must be an answer to this question (a question I'm not even sure how to ask other than to say: what is up with this?) if I can just maneuver each piece into its proper place. I want to figure out what all this means, or if it means anything at all. (R356)



- In a society where we confuse actors with characters, is this healthy? Nathan Fillion can no longer walk the streets as Nathan Fillion. He will now be known as Richard Castle, not just by confused TV-watching fans, but also by those who think that he really is a famous (albeit horrid) author. (R357)

Persoonlijke informatie delen

- Thank you for sharing this. My little brother came back from Afghanistan with what was called "light PTSD", but I know how much he has struggled with that. Will be praying for you! (R96)
- I just love the show and have watched from day one. A great break from reality and my busy life. I have 5 kids, and I am also a foster parent for babies. I love the chance to delve into a great TV show that provides a great sanity break for my mind, body, and soul. (R67)
- Hope you come back soon... My heart aches for you. My thoughts are with you... I'm self-centered but I have to say I miss you so much already... (R97)
- I love you both I'm from France in a very small town named FIGEAC <3 (R98)
- YAY!!!!!!! CONGRATULATIONS!!!!!!!!!!!!!! I WISH ALL THE BEST FOR THE TWO OF YOU AND YOU'RE GETTING MARRIED ON MY BIRTHDAY, HOW AWESOME IS THAT!?!?!?!?!?!?!?! (R43)
- My daughter has a significant number of female friends and acquaintances who have been in relationships, but have not gotten to anything permanent. (R99)
- Over the summer, I got my 21 year old son hooked on castle by rewatching season one. After we parted, he finished up season 2 and season 3. Sometime in mid Dec, my son asked me, "Why did they change Castle" so much. (R100)
- !! Castle has now lost the interest of my husband. (R53)
- Even he says how ridiculous and how unnatural it is that Kate/Rick haven't consummated their relationship by now. These 2 are both consenting, ADULTS who are obviously attracted to one another, (Chemistry is completely off-the-charts btw) both with needs and neither one is in a relationship right now ... With all the sacrifices Rick has done for Kate, it should've happened waay before now. (R101)
- But you are right I think. I was thinking about this last night. I can remember listening to Martin Luther King and Bobby Kennedy on the television (and the radio! How's that for old). I grew up with the notion that we are responsible for our actions and how they affect not only us, but others. I was raised to believe that making sacrifices for your family and friends was nothing out of the ordinary and that good, kind people make the choice to reach out to others. 9/11, globalization of so many things, internet, instant access to all matter of entertainment without ever setting foot outside one's home, social media that lets one make "friends" that will never been seen face-to-face – all those things take the human out of human interaction. They give credence to the belief that "no one will take care are me

better than me" so it's every man for himself. And you young whipper-snappers have been raised in that crucible. (R17)

- I think I have gone quite mad! No other TV series have had this effect on me in the past. (R66)
- I mean seriously...I'm trying to remember the last time 2 characters on a TV show have moved me this way. (R102)
- You're definitely not alone! The argument in Kate's apartment just broke my heart. (R103)
- When Rick said he brings her coffee every day to see her smile, I thought I was gonna die! (R104)
- But I was so happy that he didn't hold back and told her everything. Everything. No more secrets. The entire scene made me a big 'ol puddle of goo. (R105)
- You don't just see it, you feel it with her. I flinched each time she did during the first half-hour. (R35)
- I felt like I was going to throw up a few times when you could literally see her heart in her throat. She really captured the feeling of true fear! (R23)
- I NEVER actually cry at any show or film, but tonight the tears were honestly streaming. (R61)
- What a brilliant episode all around. I didn't cry when I watched "Knockout", I didn't cry watching "Rise" but I sure cried watching this episode. (R19)
- Did anyone else tear up when Esposito says he is damaged goods and Kate says so am I? (R39)
- Nathan fan, thanks for sharing that info! I *heart* this woman! She's a smart cookie. That scene broke my heart too. When he said "I'm right here..." I actually started to cry. ::sniff:: (R106)
- I started to cry during the argument scene, too. Nathan hit it out of the ballpark. He is such a terrific actor. That scene was just heartbreaking. I sure hope he gets nominated for an Emmy. He so deserves it. How can one man be so frigging perfect? (R107)
- Oh my gosh, between Alexis' grad speech and that amazing song. I got a little teary. I don't remember the last time I've gotten weepy over anything, let alone a TV show! (R108)
- That scene was perfectly written, directed and acted to address the core of their problems. Brilliant! And made me cry! (R109)

- I cried through the entire episode. (R41)
- There was a lot of contrasting which I loved. When Marlowe said emotional, he wasn't kidding and yup, I freely admitted I cried more than once. And when I get home from my event this evening, I'll re-watch....and cry again. (R110)
- They're always very good, but last night they made me laugh, cry, be frustrated and elated - all in the same episode. I went to bed thinking about them (and my heart was racing), and they were the first thought on my mind when I woke up today. Sounds crazy I know, but it's true. (R111)
- And when he told her he's been right here beside her for four years, waiting for her to see that he's so much more than just her "partner"? GAH!! I started to cry! (R112)
- I lost it with that scene in Kate's apartment. I had tears running down my face and I was sniffing and shaking. Nathan was so great there with his voice quavering and his eyes tearing up to nearly spilling over. But what really did me in was his chin quaking. More tears on my part. (R113)
- Nathan and Stana hit it out of the park on that scene as well as that kiss. I sat astounded with the kiss, almost teared up out of happiness, but I was speechless until the credits ran. (R114)
- I completely agree; when Nathan's voice cracked with the tears in his eyes, I had to do some fast blinking to stop my tears. (R115)
- Guys aren't "supposed to" cry, but I get caught up in these emotional moments.....I can't help get emotional over Kate's raw emotions when she goes to Rick.....what man in love could refuse her showing those true deep feelings, finally..... reaction showed how well they (Nathan/Stana) told us the story..... (R116)

Jezelf in het verhaal plaatsen

- I hope Kate will go your wedding with me!
from: Rick Castle (R42)
- I hope Castle will go to your wedding with me!
From:Kate Beckett (R42)
- It is the family I like to think I belong to... (R117)
- Now its about time you marry Beckett !!! And have lil castle babies :) (R118)
- We like having you and Beckett back in our family rooms! (R119)
- Anyone down for a manhunt? Let's get whoever shot Beckett and exact revenge for Montgomery too! (R120)
- Wishing you the BEST life brings you.
May you be BLESSED with many happy years together. Wish I could be there!
HUGS!!! (R121)
- The wedding was beautiful.I am so glad you invited me. (R122)
- I wish it was me :((R123)
- Congratulations -- I can't wait to see the Wedding! (R124)
- Congrats from Sweet Home Alabama, USA. -Ill be the one weeping in the back corner. (R125)
- It's not about telling Castle. It's about admitting it to yourself that you are in fact in love. (R1)
- Come on. If I was Kate at that point, sure I'd have been upset, angry at what he kept from me, and like he betrayed me and I've have said what she did. But, at that point, seeing the look on his face, let alone what he said, I think I'd have lost it and starting crying. (R126)
- Lastly, I loved the scene when she opened up to Castle about everyone being "gone". So touching. I only wish he would have given her a hug and told her that not everyone is gone. This show is killing me :) (R2)

Koppelen aan eigen leven

- That has been in the back of my mind as well. It's not one of her good sides (!) but being a single child it tends to make sense. Most people I know that were single children are a lot like that as well. (R14)
- To Seamus-I'm Irish American too! 🍀 (R64)
- IMO there is a difference between accepting something and acting it out..., acting it out (in this case saying it out loud) is even a step further than accepting. I think (and I know for me), that I can accept something respectively admit something to myself and might still need a little more time to live up to it. (R16)
- To me Castle is Stana Katic and the writers who brought the realism of PTSD to the people who needed it! I am one of them and I am forever grateful for it! It's been six years of trying to handle it on my own cause I am supposed to be the strong one in my family as the eldest. Now I am getting the treatment I need thanks to Kill Shot! Although my PTSD is more psychological than physical in cause – it's just as real as Becketts portrayal! Abig hug and thank you to both Stana and the writer! (R64)
- To me, Castle is more than just a tv show. It's a community, a lifestyle, almost a way of living. I never have more than a passing interest in anything but for some reason this show captured me and now I just can't get enough. (R65)
- And I identify a bit with that too. I haven't had the type of tragic life she has, but I hide a lot of my feelings and keep people at a distance for fear of abandonment and disappointment and it's just nice to see someone struggling with that as well. (R68)
- She'll be back Richard, all children (college bound adults too) return home for their once a year supply of peeps, I know, its been happening to me now for 5 years! Still haven't figured out why they can't buy them for themselves, lol! (R127)
- great! loved the acknowledgements :) (funny thing is, when I was in love the first time, all - those songs and poems DID make sense all of a sudden ;) (R128)
- First, I'm 66 and have been married to the same woman for 42 years. Second, and more important, I have a 30 year old single daughter who is dating a 37 year old guy with a 6 year old daughter.

My daughter has a significant number of female friends and acquaintances who have been in relationships, but have not gotten to anything permanent. Many guys that my daughter knows in the same age group have been on the other side of these not so permanent relationships. Some, though not as many as the women, have come to realize that they want a decent relationship with a smart, competent, good woman. Some have kids and are

involved with their lives. The older they are the more likely they are to realize this want. They tend to want this relationship much sooner rather than later. (R45)

- I agree. A relationship between the two would appeal to the 18-49 Demo. This generation (for the most part) have grown up using computers. The younger ones have grown up using instant messaging, twitter, texting etc. All things which are fast paced, immediate and now. Unlike the Caskett relationship. (R48)
- I have college age daughters and they've lost their interest in Castle for exactly the reasons JNorton points out. Even my wife, who is not in that 18-49 demographic has given up the show, she says its "boring now". (R49)
- While I, too, think Kate has treated Rick rather poorly, it rings true to my life experiences in human nature. Men, in general, try really hard to impress women that they are attracted to, while most women (especially the really attractive ones) are far more cautious about which men they let into close relationships. Rick is rather quick to drop his anger at her, but again, this rings true with my life experiences. The men I have known are quicker to move past anger, once the cause is acknowledged, while women seem to hold onto it much, much longer. (R5)
- I, for one, find her endlessly fascinating—flaws and all. Even though I'm a man, I was raised by a single mom and can identify with a lot of her issues and the overwhelming need to get some closure. (R18)
- Just my natural expectations of human behavior told me that if she cared as much as they're trying to tell us she does, she would have at least apologized to him later. Not like, sorry I should have been nicer and called and I'd take it all back if I could and let's get together right now, but maybe hey man, I know you were hurting too, sorry I made it worse. Like, I see it and acknowledge it sort of thing. But she never really showed any kind of regret or even awareness of how much Castle got hurt too. (R56)
- Maybe I'm just being overly sensitive and scarred from my own issues but I know I can never live with myself, knowing I hurt someone's feelings until I let them know I feel bad about it. Just seems like he's doing all the giving in this relationship and she's doing all the taking. I guess that's maybe why she's trying to work through all her crap, so she can be more giving? (R56)
- I can't imagine being pulled in that many directions, being told over and over again what you need to do with your life, being constantly pressured to make the choice everyone else thinks you should make, and then not wanting some space from that after nearly being murdered. As Castle said in Knockdown, he sometimes forgets that she is the one whose mother was murdered and she is the one who has to live with it everyday, and while she isn't going to walk away because she simply can't, Castle can do so at anytime. It ISN'T his life, it's hers. It's easy to want a relationship and push for what you want when the weight of the

world isn't on your shoulders, and in that sense, she shouldn't apologize for taking time to plant her feet. In fact, that's the only way the world doesn't end up crushing you... (R129)

- I probably relate a little bit to Beckett because I was in a car crash when I was 10, which killed my Grandma and Great Uncle and left me seriously injured. And so now I don't have much memory from before that time, and it has been a struggle to recall and deal with the actual accident as well – still now, after 10 years, I have trouble. (R61)
- Scary! A friend of my son's died on a school bus because he was standing up when an incident happened – bus had to stop quickly. OTOH, when I was in the marching band in my HS days (ancient times), we could be naughty if we won a big game! (R38)
- Someone very close to me had heart surgery, and trust me, there's a big scar – very long. I know it wouldn't be particularly attractive on any character an actress might play and might limit any outfits she'd wear...but they should in my opinion either have dealt with the scar and shown that she had plastic surgery or something. Scars are mentioned by the psychiatrist...but it can't just be that bullet hole scar — Otherwise, the scenes in Episode 1 in the surgery room were unrealistic. (R62)
- That's the point when I started crying cause I knew how she felt and what path she was refusing to go down to (even tho it was inevitable). (R41)
- I agree with you on that one! I guess I'm just not a love at first sight kind of person. I think love develops over time, once you get to know someone. (R13)
- I think (and I know for me), that I can accept something respectfully admit something to myself and might still need a little more time to live up to it. (R130)
- (coincidentally my g/f is a police detective, and she's much like Beckett...she shows her emotions rather than verbally expressing them, and even when she's being incredibly romantic she'd rather bite her tongue than say the L word) (R22)
- Bear in mind that you can have strong feelings toward someone, even be in a relationship with them and not be ready to label it as love. (R1)
- My own personal experience informs my opinion of this, to a degree. I met my now-boyfriend many years ago and fell head over heels right away. There was a lot of 'tension' and flirting, but he was emotionally unavailable and I was dealing with stuff too. It took ages of sideways glances, flirtatious conversations and shoulder-touches before we finally got together. (R24)
- I think for most men (and correct me if I'm wrong here guys), if they make a move on a woman, she'll either respond or not, of course. If they find her worth pursuing, for whatever reason, they will or they will just let her go. (R3)

- I'm right there with you tyler about wanting to heal being a good thing and understanding your limitations as far as how fast that healing will go. (Believe me, I've walked the PTSD path and I get it.) But I think there is a continuum between stubborn/selfish and proud/independent and we all have our tolerance level and definitions of when it becomes frustrating/annoying. (R17)
- I get what she's going through and I think the progress she's made is wonderful. (R17)
- I knew my husband casually (as in we had some of the same friends) for almost 25 years, and then we were good friends for a year before we ever went out on something approaching a date; we were both married to other people and had had one or two serious relationships in between first meeting and getting together. It may be bit more X-chromosome-oriented writing in truth, but the guys who say that women always know right away if they 'want' a guy in that way or not, especially for the long term, are dead wrong. (R26)
- And all that thinking had me thinking about something else... themes in Castle and how they impact how we look at our own lives. (R17)
- I think I sort of belong to your generation (a few years younger I would guesstimate by the clues left in your post;-)) and I agree with you on the generational differences and their influence on our perceptions of the characters featured in Castle. However, these characters also belong to a particular generation or generations and their actions are as much guided by that as ours. That is something to take into consideration and I think you do, given what I've read in your posts. (R10)
- The relationships run the gamete from three dates and gone to married with children and divorced. They are in Beckett's demographic. They identify with her on many real and aspirational levels. These twenty and thirty something women want a good relationship with a good guy. They want it NOW. The members of these two groups, the 18-49 demo, do realize the risks involved in relationships. They do not want to waste time answering all the questions that will eliminate all the risks in a relationship. They want the big stuff covered, but then they will fight through the rest. They want to watch a TV show where a couple that they can identify with answers the big stuff, get's it together and fights through the rest of a relationship. They do not want to watch a couple, Castle and Beckett, dance around forever. They do not identify with those people. They think they are boring and idiotic. They do not want to be like them or watch people who are like them. If that is what is on TV, they'll turn the channel and watch suff blowup on H5O. (R45)
- I love how I could recommend this show to anyone in my family and feel that I'm inviting them to watch one of the greatest love stories ever written. (R65)
- Maybe it was just that both the song and the speech struck a chord with me, as the majority of my friends are graduating college this year, but man was that an amazing scene!!!!!! (R131)

- That's the point when I started crying cause I knew how she felt and what path she was refusing to go down to (even tho it You don't just see it, you feel it with her. I flinched each time she did during the first half-hour. (R35)

Persoonlijke betrokkenheid

- To me Castle is a brilliant love story that I will enjoy watching forever if possible! (R64)
- For me, she has feelings and they matter, just as his do, regardless of who knows what. (R132)
- One of the hottest chicks on tv and a guy you can live vicariously through? What is there not to like from a guy's perspective?
So what is Castle? What kind of show is it? For me, it's one of those rare shows that actually tell a story in a way that makes it feel... I don't know... human? Like these are events and people that could actually exist in the real world. Even though the characters aren't real, the connection I feel toward them is. The show accurately portrays life; that in which life is messy, dirty, and hard, but has rays of light that can turn into a bright day. Watching the end of the finale was one of those rays of light. I can't wait to watch that ray of light become a bright shining day. (R63)
- I, too, have been spending the last few months trying to figure out how and why this show has gotten such a grip on my heart, my mind, and my life. (R133)
- Richard Castle :-)) Some people work for a living as Beckett would answer :-)) (R134)
- Luv u Castle!!!! (R135)
- We know those were for Beckett, but what kind of coffee do you drink? (R136)
- This gives me new ideas on what to write off next year. Thanks, Rick. (R137)
- And Richard, why are you buying lattes when there is a perfectly good espresso machine in house now.... which I am sure was also deductible? (R138)
- Don't complain about latte... btw, did you talk to Kate? stop behaving like a child. (R139)
- I love Castle♥ Don't let Beckett know that your daily heartfelt gesture became a tax write off! Chicks don't dig that! Lol (R140)
- For the honor of parents everywhere YOU MUST WIN RICK!!! (R141)
- This is WAR!! Rooting for you Rick! (R142)
- She'll be back Richard, all children (college bound adults too) return home for their once a year supply of peeps, I know, its been happening to me now for 5 years! Still haven't figured out why they can't buy them for themselves, lol! (R143)

- What are you doing!?!?! A flight attendant? Seriously talk to Beckett!!! Please... save us all..... (R144)
- Rick Castle I know and love....the one who always tells his daughter the truth no matter what....come clean with Beckett NOW...ya'll need to talk!!! (R145)
- I don't like how you're treating Buckett. She really does love you, and you need to give her the chance to tell you. She's better than that stupid blonde in your car! (R146)
- Richard Castle, Would Just like to say.
You're Awesome. (R147)
- Only someone like you could rhyme a tweet and look AAAAWSOOOME!!!!!! Congratulations to Ryan & Jenny! :) (R148)
- Now its about time you marry Beckett !!! And have lil castle babies :) (R149)
- Maybe one day we will be hearing wedding bells for a certain detective and her partner in crime? Hopefully both parties won't be looking at which nursing home would be best for a honeymoon by the time it happens though! (R150)
- Finally. Give them Both My Regards and wish them Luck for me. (R151)
- Congrtulations we'll see how they fare (R152)
- Congrats Ryan and Jenny. It's been great watching your relationship grow. From the dating phase to the amazing proposal by Ryan all the way to now as newlyweds. Hope you two have a great honeymoon. (R153)
- Third time is a charm Castle, get moving! (R154)
- Congrats Jen & Ryan . Ok Kate & Rick get the fever ! (R155)
- Hope you finally bought that wedding gift--remember china is always a good gift! (R156)
- Glad to hear your doing good ricky. Hope to hear from ya more oftain again. Its been a boring time without you. (R157)
- I've started reading my copy! Also got the Derrick Storm graphic novel--it was good. Thank you for the additions to my library, Mr Castle. (R158)
- Yay! You're back! You've been missed ♥ (R159)

- Nice to have you back on my Facebook feed, Mr. Castle--even if my Facebook feed is all wonky now with their changes. (R160)
- We love you, Castle!!!! (R161)
- Ugh. Reading that was like a knife to the heart. (R162)
- Sorry to here about that hope everything ok take what ever time you need we will still be here when you get back. (R163)
- Hang in there. (R164)
- hope to hear some good news... we are with you Rick... (R165)
- Aww Rick, never fear, Kate's a tough bird, she'll make it out of this ordeal, she just can't leave in the middle of this unfinished business can she ? And I mean ALL of them, unfinished businesses !!! Besides, you know what she'd say ? 'Butch up a bit, Castle' ! Now go watch over her, just come back whenever with good news, that's all that matters now ! (R166)
- Don't worry! Our thoughts are with U and Kate <333 We'll wait for U.. always ;D (R167)
- my goodness, hoping youre ok, were all upset over finale....i really think you two need to acknowledge your feelings (R168)
- Big hug Castle! Come back soon! (R169)
- Dont be away too long we will miss you.x (R170)
- I hope everything's ok. :: HUGGLES:: (R171)
- Aww, Rick. Hope you've by her side this whole time. :) (R172)
- I know there won't be "news" for a while, but anxiously await update of some sort when it's appropriate. She's a fighter, and with you and the rest of her family in her corner, she'll recover -- though I'm sure the scars (of all time) will run deep. (R173)
- Rick, while Kate is still in a coma, you could keep us updated with her status? We can help you get through her shooting. hugs (R174)
- Miss you every day more.. (R175)
- Hoping for the best ... sending good thoughts & prayers your way. :) (R176)
- see, she's fine... but I wonder if your heart feels better :(Get some trumpets and blow those walls away ;) (R177)

- why not ? OH MY GOSH HES NOT GOING TO BE TWITERING FOR A WHILE (R178)
- I know she will recover. She has too. You and she have to find out who is behind this. There is someone higher up than Montgomery pulling the strings. And maybe, just maybe you can clear him as well. (R179)
- Rick, take whatever time tht u need... We, your fans, Understand and love u and Beckett lots... (R180)
- Take all the time you need. Sorry you're going through a difficult time. Your fans are always here for u. (R181)
- dear richard we are with you both- with bated breath we wait with you too (R182)
- Hugs and love to you. (R183)
- Are you talking about what happened with Beckett because that was a while ago. If not, then what happened? (R184)
- Prayers and warm comforting thoughts going out to you from Chicago! (R185)
- Don't lose her Richard! The good ones are hard to find! (R186)
- Hang in there! No matter how bad things get it can always get better. We're all here for you. (R187)
- I feel so bad for you. Do you need a hug? (R188)
- My thoughts and prayers are with you and everyone else during this hard time. ♥ (R189)
- RC hang in there. KB needs you now. We understand and look forward to hearing from you when things are better (R190)
- I don't know if I should be liking this status, I mean Beckett was shot, that's not something to like! Anyway, we all feel for you Castle, it breaks our hearts as well! (R191)
- We love you and miss you ♥ Hope Beckett does come out of this with no scars....and you toooooooooooooo ♥ (R192)
- Whatever it is, you are in our prayers. (R193)
- Thoughts and prayers sent your way. (R194)
- Im hoping it was all a dream (R195)

- Thoughts, prayers & support coming your way from all of to you! (R196)
- Hope you come back soon... My heart aches for you. My thoughts are with you... I'm self-centered but I have to say I miss you so much already... (R197)
- stay strong big guy!! (R198)
- YOU WILL SURVIVE THIS . IT WILL MAKE YOU STRONGER . AND OUT FOR JUSTICE ,WONDER WHAT MESSES YOU WILL GET INTO TRYING TO DO THIS. (R199)
- Please, just tell us she's recovering, please!! (R200)
- I'll keep you both in my prayers. Stay strong because she'll need you when she wakes up. Maybe you should read to her. (R201)
- So hope that you are well & such, so sorry to hear about heartbreaking news. Do take care & such.. Cheeres, Luv, snuggles, etc.. (R202)
- I know it's difficult for you, but please keep us posted on her condition. (R203)
- I'm so sorry, Castle. I know you're barely hanging on, but in the meantime, please don't drink yourself into oblivion. I don't want to hear about you landing yourself in rehab and settling for Natalie Rhodes with her Nikki Heat wig. Stay strong! (R204)
- Thoughts and prayers are with Kate. Tell her to get well....I want to see a wedding!! (R205)
- You have to be strong, and fight this battle a little more... it will end happily! (R206)
- Our sincerest thoughts and prayers are with you. (R207)
- I hope she's ok! (R208)
- Heartbroken... Again ♥ Take good care of her (R209)
- *hug* hope things get better (R210)
- Here's to hoping that Beckett is okay. ♥ (R211)
- Be strong Rick. We love ya. (R212)
- Take all the time you need. Do what you've got to do. We'll be here. (R213)
- Hang in there Rick. I have faith things will turn out ok. (R214)

- Hurry back when Beckett is well!! :) (R215)
- Take all the time you need,ricky. (R216)
- So happy for both of you! Love the show... looking forward to the big day :) (R217)
- I'm so exciting for you. To have your wedding and on the show! It's fun to see weddings of the cast when they are NOT the main 2 characters. Wish I could see more of you and your partner take lead on some shows saving the becket and castle. (R218)
- Congratulations and Best Wishes to you both! (R219)
- I'm looking forward to a wonderful time at your wedding! You will both look fabulous! Enjoy! Love the show and all of you - amazing chemistry! (R220)
- Congrats, you two. Many happy years together :) (R221)
- Can't wait to see the wedding!
Hope there is some epic kissing! ;-)
LOVE the show! (R222)
- Congratulations! You two are beautiful together! I can't wait for the wedding - wishing you years of happiness! (R223)
- Congratulations! Best wishes from Boston, MA! (R224)
- Wish you a lifetime and beyond of happiness and love. Congrats. (R225)
- Congrats to the happy couple.... (R226)
- Wishing you years of joy and love (R227)
- Best wishes to the cutest couple ever from upstate NY :) (R228)
- Congrats! I wish you all the best! (R229)
- Wishing you the BEST life brings you.
May you be BLESSED with many happy years together. Wish I could be there!
HUGS!!! (R230)
- About time. Congratulations. i can't wait to see it! (R231)

- Wishing you both many long and happy years together, and may the wind be always at your back and a smile upon your faces. (R232)
- Can't wait for the happy day! (R233)
- Congrats! You two look great together!! =)
Best wishes from Buenos Aires, Argentina. (R234)
- I'm a massive fan of the series and can't wait for the episode!!! Hoping for loads of Caskett fun :D You two are simple adorable together. Best wishes to you Kevin and Jenny! :) (R235)
- Congratulations, Kevin.
My best to Jennifer!
A long, fun, happy, loving, and adventure-filled life together. (R236)
- Hope all your dreams as a married couple come true! This wedding is going to be epic!! Best wishes from NJ!! (R237)
- My god bless u in a wonderful life together (R238)
- Congrats from Miami Florida (R239)
- Love Castle and I find it amazing how you can have your wedding the way you wanted it when you started out. (R240)
- This is hilarious! I love Castle, I love all the characters, I love the Nikki Heat novels, and I especially love how everyone involved with the show is so creative and includes the fans every step of the way! Congratulations on all the success and I will definitely be watching the wedding on Monday night! :) (R241)
- CAN'T WAIT HOPE IT IS AN AWESOME WONDERFUL DAY. HAVE A GREAT LIFE TOGETHER!
(R242)
- May you have a long and happy life together. Can't wait to see the wedding next Monday.
Best Wishes from New Jersey (R243)
- Congratulations! You two are perfect for each other! Best wishes to both of you! So cute! :)
(R244)
- Best Wishes and Many Happy Days. (R245)
- Congratulations! I can't wait..
Vivan los novios!!! :) (R246)

- I am beyond happy for you two!! I wish you nothing but the best in your new life together and I hope you stay in love and remain happy till death do you part. <3
Much Love from Erin in Connecticut. (R247)
- have a wonderful wedding and a happy life together!! (R248)
- Congrats guys! I hope you two live a long happy life together! (R249)
- So cute. Love you guys! (R250)
- Congratulations!! I hope you both have a long and happy life together! You both look so happy!! (R251)
- Congratulations on your wedding? Hope you enjoy many years of honey-milk together! (R252)
- What a hoot! It's corny, but still I read the whole thing, including the comments!
And like someone else said, hope this brings back warm memories of your most special day.... (R253)
- Best wishes for a wonderful happy life together. (R254)
- Meilleurs vœux et félicitations depuis la Normandie, en France. (R255)
- Congrats! Wish you guys a life time of happiness:) (R256)
- congratulations on ur wedding day may u both be very happy. (R257)
- Congratulations guys, the best luck for you two! (R258)
- Congratulations on your upcoming nuptials! (R259)
- Best wishes, Congratulations (R260)
- Congrats from Canada :) (R261)
- Congratulations! I love you guys. Best wishes, I can't wait! (R262)
- Only the best wishes for the happy couple (R263)
- best wishes, hope you have many happy and hilarious years ahead of you (R264)
- Congrats! I hope you have a wonderful life together! :) (R265)
- Congratulations to you both! I wish you all the best for the future. :-) (R266)

- Congratulations to you both and best wishes from Ourense, Spain. You guys are made for each other. <3 (R267)
- Wonderful luck. I love weddings (R268)
- Congrats from Sweet Home Alabama, USA. -Ill be the one weeping in the back corner. (R269)
- Happy WEdding day!
Cheers from FRANCE (R270)
- Looking forward to it! Congratulations to both! (R271)
- Congratulations to both of you! Wishing you a very happy life together! :-) (R272)
- Congratulations to you from Poland! I'm so happy ;d (R273)
- WISHING YOU BOTH ALL THE BEST FOR YOUR FUTURE.
FROM ENGLAND (UK) (R274)
- Congrats! Have fun, and I wish you both the best! (R275)
- Félicitation depuis la France, vous être trop mignon tout les deux (R276)
- Congrats to you both! (R277)
- Can't wait-each week is better than before-your wedding should be amazing (R278)
- Can't wait for the wedding! Have fun and congratulations. Love from Malaysia. (R279)
- Hey!A verry good news that the announcement of your wedding.I love you so much.I wish happiness to you both! (R280)
- Thanks for sharing real pics to support the storyline of the show. I hope filming this episode allowed you to relive a joyous moment in your lives. (R281)
- Congrats! Can't wait till next week! And I bet neither can you ;-) Greetings from the Netherlands! (R282)
- Hope both of you a lot of happiness because you deserve it. Together you look really really cute.
A big hug from Valencia, Spain (R283)
- I love you both I'm from France in a very small town named FIGEAC <3 (R284)

- Félicitation à vous deux et tous mes voeux de bonheur!!.. (R285)
- You two are made for each other! It seems like you've been married for years already! May many seasons pass with you two as happy as you are now! (R286)
- Best wishes, you're the perfect couple ! ;) ? (R287)
- Mazaltov' to you too ! Wish you all the best (including to drink the best wine ;p) !:D (R288)
- Really excited for your wedding! Love you guys here in Pittsburgh PA! (R289)
- Congratulations, you two!
Never stop being adorable, and may your life together be a wondrous adventure! (R290)
- Best of wishes! You two deserve it!:) (R291)
- You guys are great for each other. I hope you have a wonderful day! Best wishes from Thailand (R292)
- I hope you have a wonderful life together. I hope the day goes to plan as well. All my love (R293)
- Dear Jennifer & Kevin,
I hope you have a wonderful day, and enjoy the rest of your life together.
Lots of Love (R294)
- I really can't wait! Congratulations you two! x (R295)
- May you have the happiest of dreams and wishes in your time together. (R296)
- Congratulations and good luck from Sydney, Australia (R297)
- Good luck to you both ;) . xo (R298)
- Good luck to you both from Australia <3 (R299)
- Congradulations and best wishes from Estonia! :) (R300)
- Best wishes on your upcoming nuptials, Kevin & Jenny! (R301)
- YAY!!!!!!! CONGRATULATIONS!!!!!!!!!!!!!! I WISH ALL THE BEST FOR THE TWO OF YOU AND YOU'RE GETTING MARRIED ON MY BIRTHDAY, HOW AWESOME IS THAT!?!?!?!?!?!?!?! (R43)

- Congrats guys!
p.s. hope castle and beckett decide to follow your steps soon (; (R302)
- Congrats to a great couple...looking forward to 1/9/12. (R303)
- Lots of love and Congratulations!
Best wishes! (R304)
- Muchas Felicidades! (R305)
- Good Luck you guys I wish you all the happiness in the world (R306)
- May all your realities be happy ones
Please throw the bouquet to Kate (R44)
- Congratulations! I hope this day is even better than your most perfect of dreams. You two are extraordinary. Here's to beating the odds!
Always. (R307)
- I'm currently reading the book. The first thing I noticed is the dedication: once more it's to Beckett even if he doesn't say it clearly.. I remember that he only dedicates his books to people he really cares about.. I can't remember if he dedicates more than one of his books to the same (R308)
- Chapter 10 *totally* shocked the hell out of me, but I guess that's why Castle said Heat would be "a little slutty"... 😊 Definitely lives up to the title, lol. That's for sure.
I heard in some interview (can't remember where, maybe someone else knows?) that the book will be referenced— even by page number in some places— throughout the next couple of eps... Wonder if Beckett will bring it up? Kind of hard to miss that chapter if she's supposed to have read it and all... Should an interesting convo between her and Castle if she does, since apparently he thought about *it*... in great detail... lmao. Can't even imagine what Ryan & Esposito will have to say about it if they read it, too! 😊 (R33)
- I liked that "Castle" wrote it as Heat/aka Beckett almost always being a step ahead of Rook in the investigations, and I don't think Beckett will have much to complain about as far as her portrayal as a very savvy, very capable detective. However, chapter 10 will really rile her up, can't wait to see that! Can't wait for the teasing she'll get from Esposito and Ryan! (and Lanie!) (R309)
- Can't wait to see everyone's reaction to the book, especially Beckett's (R310)
- I can't wait to see Kate Beckett's reaction to Ch. 9-10. (R311)
- Poor Castle :P (R33)

- I just wanted to give her a big hug and tell her that it's okay. (also her saying she's ready. I totally called it!) (R41)
- Can't wait til she figures it out. (R2)
- I think I identified with her right away because of the way she treated Castle. (R68)
- It was very much "I will take non of this crap you're trying to have" type of attitude and I loved it. And now as I've watched the character develop I think she is honestly one of the strongest females characters on TV. She's been the one I've consistently seen refuse help, and not that that is a sign of strength, but it just shows me the type of person she is. (R68)

Intimiteit

- Why oh why did he pick Jenny over me...? (R312)
- Real or not, I have a total crush on Richard (R313)
- I want to find a guy like Richard Castle. I want to find my one and done. Someone who will love me unconditionally. Girls we all want that (R314)
- It is the family I like to think I belong to... (R63)
- To me, Castle is more than just a tv show. It's a community, a lifestyle, almost a way of living. (R65)
- It's more than just a TV program to so many of us, and not many can explain why. (R315)
- Congratulations! I love you guys. Best wishes, I can't wait! (R316)
- I just wanted to give her a big hug and tell her that it's okay. (also her saying she's ready. I totally called it!) (R317)
- You may not like her actions or not agree with what she is doing or not doing but, IMO, to ask if her feelings (regardless of what you think they are, or are not) don't matter if Castle doesn't know is to ask if she matters. She's a person just like he is. Your question, whether you meant it this way or not, implies to me that her feelings only have worth if they are validated by another person. I don't think her feelings have to be "shown" to someone to matter (or be meaningful). I bet they matter to her. (R15)
- For me, she has feelings and they matter, just as his do, regardless of who knows what. (R15)
- For me, nothing she has ever said or done, tells me he is just a friend, to her. In fact, everything she has done or said, has told me just the opposite, regardless of how she has expressed herself outwardly. (R3)
- I'm proud of her and her choices but I still see in her a bit of the spoiled only child that just assumes she's will be able to work things out on her own timeline without giving much regard to others needs. (R17)
- Beckett is in a much better place thanks to her therapy. There are no SOs around. We just need Beckett to decide she is ready and make a move. (R21)
- ***the thing i agree on is with Castle willingness to wait, he gets more and more lovable by the season. (R1)

- I love her. (R17)
- After last night, I am in love. (R318)
- When she came TO HIM for a change, I loved his reaction. Complete and total shock. Played to absolute perfection. As I said, I am in love. (R319)
- I wanted to hug Rick and tell him everything was going to be OK. (R320)
- ...and yes, she has a perfect nose, a perfect mouth, perfect lips, etc.,etc.,etc! sheesh! There should be a law about someone looking so perfect. Everyone has something about them, that distracts the eye of the person looking at them, such as Nathan's crooked nose. 😊 Stana's eyes are beautiful and I can't help but be distracted by looking at her directly in the eyes. You can't help yourself. They draw you in, and you can't look away. This makes for a great interrogator! (R3)
- I don't think there is anything they could have her do that would make me turn against her. (R321)
- I'm pretty sure we're all a little bit in *love* with Nathan!! Okay, maybe more than a little. Maybe a lot. Like, maybe we're obsessed. Just kidding. Or not. You decide. HA HA HA (R322)
- Well it probably doesn't help that I have a total girl crush on Beckett but I thought she was fantastic (R23)
- I agree that Espisito was looking pretty good! Although my crush is still my girl crush on Beckett 😊 (R23)

Begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

- Our discussion centers upon whether Beckett realize she is in love with Castle or she is not ready to tag it as love (acceptance) and have feels strong feelings towards him. I chose 'strong feelings' to describe it because those are the words that was use by AM in his interview about the subject. So people post on, whether Beckett has accepted or not accepted her feelings for Castle. And some argument on why we believe it to be true. Please note that, our reasoning are our personal belief. The true state of her acceptance have not been reveal. (and yeah.. everyone here knows that Beckett's already in love with Castle no doubt about that but does the Becks the character know it ?) (R1)
- But Castle being a single child as well probably can relate to that better than we do. (R14)
- Both Castle and Beckett are both flawed, emotional people who are trying to do the right thing. They aren't perfect, the relationship is messy, they're human. It's one of the reasons why I find this relationship and these characters so appealing. (R15)
- I keep seeing comments saying 'we need a kiss', and I understand the frustration - I really do but I just don't think they can go there. As Arky said once (before he mostly stopped posting here) 'if they kissed, they wouldn't have reached a soft surface' (he was talking about the LA hotel scene, but the sentiment is the same). A kiss is a really intimate thing and once they get to that point the cat's out of the bag on the relationship and there would be no stopping them. These people are supposed to be 'in love', so the whole dating scenario is also doubtful - they would be straight into being wholly in a relationship (they are supposedly already in a relationship of sorts). (R323)
- And why would it be so terrible? I agree that after four years and a lot of told-but-never-shown - burgers, coffees, Old Haunts, family dinners and breakfasts (she lived with them for days after Tick, Tick) the whole dating thing is a bit off and passed, but otherwise? Why is it tragical if two independent, mature (and attractive) adults, with plenty of experiences behind them, lives sexuality in a natural way? That it's nice, the first occasion has a special importance, but as much as it is essential, it is not more than ONE PART of a relationship. I don't think that anybody picture them as someones who can not enjoy it and I think their characterisation has passed the point long ago where it could be said that it is only lust. (R324)
- That part of the episode was put in to give us the "Oh No's" and it apparently worked. But at the end, Beckett didn't buy what Sophia was selling. She knew it was all a lie and that her relationship with Rick would be different. He told her so. (R325)
- I am one of the younger Castle viewers and I have got to say that I am not at all bored with Caskett. I want Caskett together as much as the next person but I am not going to dwell on it every single episode left of Season 4. If and when Castle and Beckett get together I want them to be committed to one another. I want Castle and Beckett to be open with one another. I am young and naive and don't have the strongest thoughts when it comes to

Caskett. I think that the younger viewers are content with where Caskett is at this point. How can Beckett and Castle move forward when they have two secrets out there? Their secrets have to come out, bottom line. (R52)

- I agree! in season 3 Kate & Castle used to go out to dinner now nothing. what happened kate stopped having a life after work.. castle was telling a story from a PI diary the blue butterfly was trying see kate's re-action, he was trying to judge her feelings towards him, but he did not get the response he was looking for. I don't believe a man will wait for ever unless given some incentive, she hasn't showed any interest in him season 4, no hug, no touch, she never shares her feelings, maybe she can say she loves him but that she has to take the relationship slow, until she can overcome her inner demons first before she can move forward with the relationship. All that I ask is that you be patient with me she can say to rick. why hasn't kate asked rick come over for dinner? I am surprised that captain gates doesn't have castle take psych evaluation after almost drowned almost shot in the head that he is safe to be with the team. chances are he has studied some form of criminal psychology for his writing career, so he would know what to say to pass the psych eval anyway. I think rick is wating for kate to make the first move. he has hinted his feelings now its up to kate.. (R54)
- If I was Beckett I would wonder just how much of himself Castle is putting into Rook. Because Rook is totally jealous of Heat's old boyfriend, so even if Beckett can't see it directly from Castle, she could read it here... It's like a love letter to her. 🤔.But I guess Beckett will just repeat her mantra: It's fiction! 🤔 (R326)
- That sounds really obvious after I say it but if we are supposed to believe that the books are written - from Castle's point of view, and what we read in them are the bases for what he wants to happen between him and Beckett (relationship wise), then I hope we see more of that in season 4 if TPTB actually wants to develop a true relationship between them. Beckett can say the books are fiction all she wants, but I agree that for Castle there is more truth behind his words than she lets herself believe. (R327)
- Kate is finally letting Rick talk to her about those areas she has been protecting. She is not pushing him away now. (R5)
- I, for one, find her endlessly fascinating—flaws and all. Even though I'm a man, I was raised by a single mom and can identify with a lot of her issues and the overwhelming need to get some closure. Also, her depiction in the premiere or any other episode didn't strike me as good or bad, just honest. She's in constant pain, confused and confounded by her own inability to get close to someone; she pushes everything into her job because she never felt there was someone that would be willing to persevere long enough to break down those walls. History had proven her right, until now. (R18)

- Maybe I'm just being overly sensitive and scarred from my own issues but I know I can never live with myself, knowing I hurt someone's feelings until I let them know I feel bad about it. Just seems like he's doing all the giving in this relationship and she's doing all the taking. I guess that's maybe why she's trying to work through all her crap, so she can be more giving? (R56)
- I know it's been said a hundred plus times on the boards, but I see that she is protecting her heart the only way she knows how, and she does that by keeping her distance emotionally. She's hiding those feelings even from herself. I see the talk on the swings as doing the best she can not to hurt him by at least telling him where she is coming from. She is still holding herself back, but wants him to know why at least. I am encouraged that she is recognizing this about herself. (R2)
- The fact that she was so emotionally distraught when she told the psychologist/psychiatrist that she remembers everything tells me that at least this is very real and important to her and that is a great start. (R2)
- I think Kate is a very complex character and although I don't always like the way she handles things with Castle, I know it's because she is emotionally not able to do better. I don't think there is anything they could have her do that would make me turn against her. (R2)
- Don't worry. Since Castle has constantly his mom and daughter reminding him of his flaws will he in return keep reminding Kate of hers. Most likely more subtle but that will make up for some great moments. (R14)
- Kate is a complex character who has come to realize that she has to get her head on straight. She knows she has to put her mother's case to rest in order to move forward and be able to completely invest herself emotionally in a relationship... especially when it is the one relationship she really wants, with Castle. I think in her taking the time away, she did a lot of soul searching and has come to understand herself and her issues very well. The fact that she acknowledges the wall that prevents her from having the kind of relationship she wants is BIG for Kate. (And the fact that she said it out loud to Castle, blew me away.) She is trying to do the right thing in order to give THEM the best shot possible at making it work in the long run. She doesn't want them to fail because of this. (R328)
- Personally I think it would have rung untrue if Kate had suddenly opened up more than she did – the character is naturally cautious, one assumes because of her mother's death and the men you feel she was closest to, Royce and Sorenson, somehow let her down. It's amazing how quickly a new lifestyle becomes the norm and that in itself then becomes very difficult to break. We know that Kate trusts Esposito, Ryan and Castle with her life, but the former clearly haven't been closely linked romantically with Beckett, so she hasn't come across someone like Castle for a hell of a long time. The fact there is probably an element of mistrust during part of the first year she and Castle were partnered because he was forced on her, he had a certain reputation and he ignored her when she specifically requested he

not look into her mother's death. Then he slowly starts worming his way in, but by now she's too set in her belief that anyone she starts to truly care about beyond friendship, leaves. Then we get to the end of S2 and we know Beckett was going to tell Castle she would go with him to the Hamptons, a big move for her, and he leaves. Cue S3 and the barriers are firmly back in place again – it takes the season for them to slowly be broken down again, and I think we were starting to see signs, ie her saying "Always" and telling Castle more tidbits about her relationship with her mother.

Then, the one person she trusts more than a friend, a second father figure, is the third cop who was involved in what happened to her mother. At the funeral the look she gives Castle suggests she has forgiven him, even though nothing has been said, but Castle and Beckett are so good at communicating without actually saying something. Of course her walls are going to jump straight back up again – it's her defence mechanism.

Now we're at S4 and Castle is the only person she truly has feelings for, outside of friendship or her father, who is still alive and no doubt she has doubts on how long that could last, she knows she has a target on her back, add her naturally cautious state and I don't see why we, the audience, would expect Kate to be any different.

Again, personally I think the admissions she made during the episode are bigger than anything she has revealed about herself before. Whilst the audience (and her shrink) are the only one's who know she heard Castle, the vulnerability she showed Castle was much more than I might have expected. Perhaps part of this is the fact that she now definitely knows Castle loves her, perhaps part of it is the fact she came so close to death, perhaps it's something we haven't been made aware of yet.

My opinion is that Kate has moved forward more than I would have expected, perhaps not far enough for some and for others they only see the negative that she hasn't confessed her love for him. Personally I don't think it would have worked if that had happened because the relationship wouldn't have been true and real, she would have had one foot out of the door, even though Castle means far more to her than anyone else has. At least now she has finally been honest about where she stands, given him hope that there can be more, just not now. Again, I think had she admitted that she had heard Castle, the relationship would have been "forced" upon them and again it wouldn't have been natural and true.

I'm not condoning the fact that she has lied to Castle, but similarly I don't think she had a choice if their relationship can work sometime in the future.

Just my opinion. (R57)

- As far as we know the last person she loved was Royce who betrayed her, so I think that reinforces the idea that she is putting up walls to protect her heart. (R329)
- Castle hasn't been devoted to Beckett for three years, he's barely even known that he was in love with her for more than half a year, we don't know that Castle is the only one Beckett has feelings for now, and though he has been her partner for those three years, both Castle and Beckett have been in their own relationships, indulging in deep fried twinkies or hunky detectives.

That means one thing, if Castle fell in love with her somewhere along the way, then Beckett isn't obligated in any way to dump Josh immediately for him nor is she somehow a bad

person or somehow treating Castle badly by not giving in to the feelings Castle now embraces. Of all the times that Beckett said always, took him to dinner when he was devastated over Gina, or was simply there for him when he needed someone, the same exact things can be said of Castle, and that simply means that they are equals who are great friends and partners. Nowhere in there is Shakespeare...

So at this point, not only does Beckett have to deal with a boyfriend that she really does like, she has to deal with her mentor being killed to save her, the guilt that must be associated with that, another mentor who was brutally murdered in an alley, her mother's case that has weighed her down for over 12 years and that she has had to live with every day since Castle opened the files, friends who want nothing more to protect her and make her better in ways that THEY want, and finally Castle's declaration of love when she was passing out from blood loss. Oh and let's not forget the giant scar and horrible pain she must be still be in after nearly being killed.

I can't imagine being pulled in that many directions, being told over and over again what you need to do with your life, being constantly pressured to make the choice everyone else thinks you should make, and then not wanting some space from that after nearly being murdered. As Castle said in Knockdown, he sometimes forgets that she is the one whose mother was murdered and she is the one who has to live with it everyday, and while she isn't going to walk away because she simply can't, Castle can do so at anytime. It ISN'T his life, it's hers. It's easy to want a relationship and push for what you want when the weight of the world isn't on your shoulders, and in that sense, she shouldn't apologize for taking time to plant her feet. In fact, that's the only way the world doesn't end up crushing you... And see that's the thing, it's not Castle's fault because he is clearly angry and hurt, and I don't blame him in the slightest. But if we want to be real and human, then we have to understand that that conversation in Rise is exactly what Beckett was trying to avoid before she was ready because I think she knew that if Castle had pushed his feelings on her when she was so raw and vulnerable and hurting, then it wouldn't have ended up on swings. In fact, I know it wouldn't have ended up on swings, and I would bet that the fallout would have been much worse. (R25)

- I honestly don't think it's about Beckett not trusting Castle – I think it's more to do with the fact that she just knows she is in a bad place emotionally and can't deal with anyone no matter how much she loves them while she's in the emotional state/frame of mind she's in... it's nothing to do with Castle – it's her having to come to terms with events in her life, to learn who she is herself before she can be in a committed relationship. (R330)
- I think that shows her great self-judgement and character. This way she also tries to not hurt Castle. If she'd dive into a relationship right now, she'd not be able to give 100% of herself and she feels that her and Castle deserve more than that. Castle might not realize that now, but he will at some point. (R41)
- What has always struck me about these characters is that even when I've not liked the decisions they've made, the choices have made sense to me based on their circumstances or

characterization. Beckett has always been shown to be a closed-off individual, and it did not surprise me that she went into hiding at one of the lowest emotional points in her life. As cliched as it sounds, I do believe it's a case of "It's not you, it's me." when it comes to Kate. (R34)

- Kate is Kate and in the season premiere her actions fell largely in line with her character. She is a hider, so I was not at all surprised to find out that she had hidden from Castle (and Lanie and the boys) for most if not all of her disability time. She needed time to think. It was just as she told Castle: contact with any or all of them would not have allowed her to gain distance. Actually, I think, that absence was exactly what she needed to face her life again. (R10)
- That's an assumption and most likely what Kate thinks. He never said anything like that or hinted about it. To me its a bit unfair to Castle. He's being nothing but supportive and caring all the time. And not because he just wants to sleep with her. (R14)
- In many ways, I think Kate thought that when she returned to the precinct, everything would be back to normal and she wouldn't be forced into these mind numbing conversations that her friends would press upon her. And to an extent, that was the case, Esposito and Ryan were there and everything was back to normal with them fairly quickly, but Lanie and Castle weren't there and that's where the problem lies. (R25)
- So she is faced with the choice of upsetting either Castle or Josh or trying to find a way to get some space and sort things out to the point where she can be fair to both. And again, she has to do all that with all that other stuff hanging over her.

That's one of the reasons I think we over-romanticize them: there is no universe anywhere, no Star Trek-esque dimensional rift where *this* Beckett is ever going to dump Josh in that hospital (especially after he was instrumental in saving her life...) bed and take up a relationship with Castle that quickly. And honestly, I would think much less of her if she did. We may not value her relationship with Josh because we haven't seen much of it and because we want so badly for her to be with Castle, but she does value it and he is a real human being whose feelings matter to her. Of course, the exact same thing can be said about her and Castle. And in the end, being fair to both, IMO, meant that they both would be hurt. (R25)

- I didn't even THINK about how she would feel towards Castle for dragging her out of the hanger... obviously she was going to feel something! I think she mostly used that as an excuse to get some space from him, but I felt like a total idiot for not even thinking she might be mad at him. Her mentor was killed and she could have protected him, or at least that's how she felt. Plus she knew he died to save her, she's no dumbie. (R23)
- All her boys helped her, stood beside her, backed her up – and if you look at the looks back and forth near the end between Beckett and Espo, then Ryan, then the conversation with

Castle, it's clear she knows it and is grateful to all of them. And then there's the final scene with the shrink – yet another boy who will help Beckett heal herself. (R35)

- Sorry...I should have worded that differently. I just meant that even though there wasn't a whole lot Castle could actively do, he was helping her the best way he could: by getting help from someone he knew could do it better and by stepping aside while still being supportive. It could have easily went unnoticed, but I was glad that she recognized his role in helping her through it.
Also, loved how concerned and worried Castle was about Beckett. He really showed how much he cares about her (which we already know, but it was nice to see it play out the way it did). I'm not going to say much more since others have already mentioned things I enjoyed/loved/liked about the episode. (R59)
- Rick is just simply such a rock for Kate...if she weren't in love with him yet, she would so fall for him now. (R10)
- Kate is finally ready to tackle the demons of her mom's murder and of her own shooting. That wall is coming down fast. Chunks of it are flying all over the place. There is a huge hole in it already and you can see Rick looking in. Oh, and there was that "always"! (R10)
- Sorry to be Debbie Downer but I think it might just be me but In the last scene between rick and kate, When he was saying "If you see my partner, tell her she owes me about 100 coffees" I know it was meant to seem cute, but i took it as he was saying i'm going to stop. And when he said she was a handful, Did anyone else feel like this cause i think i might be crazy 😬 (R60)
- It was Beckett who claimed herself to be a handful, Castle agreed but by his expression and his actions throughout "Kill Shot" also showed that he is saying she is so worth it! As to the Coffee comments, I took it to mean that he hopes his old partner, meaning a healed and healthier Kate is on her way back to him, and I think we can assume by Kate's reply to Castle that she is indeed on the way back. She may be a work in progress as we all are, but she seems to finding the path. I took it to be a very positive conversation. (R37)
- Oh, and another thing about the last scene with the therapist. Remember when Castle told her that she is afraid to know who she is without her mom's murder to solve? She was still afraid to find out in "Rise" but now she is "ready" – I just love how they build this up. (R19)
- I kind of had a different spin on the 100 coffees. I thought he was saying he was going to be around a long time to collect on those coffees. His way of telling her that he would be there for her, without actually saying it. (R39)
- I noticed that Kate started to regain control of her life in the evidence room with Espo. Also, Rick kept turning to Espo with his concerns about Kate – even to the point of telling him that he was probably the only one who could reach her. (R5)

- In Kill Shot when Rick rushes in saying he figured out the dolls, Gates immediately says Mr Castle we don't have time for your theatrics. But he replies Captain just listen and then shows that is wild theories can be useful. After that not only does she listen to him but also asks him for his opinion. She is seeing first hand how useful he can be and I think this is what will probably save him in the upcoming Mayor episode. (R39)
- The scene in Kate's apartment when she examines her scars – as she walks into the scene the picture in the background is so reflective of what she has and continues to experience. The woman in the picture trying to flee from the attacking airplanes - trying to escape the turmoil and danger. Also reflective of Kate trying to escape her past. It illustrates how Kate's world is crashing down around her despite her best efforts. And, Kate seeing her reflection in the mirror while recalling and reflecting on her own shooting. First looking at her physical scars, then focusing on her eyes which are the windows to her soul. You see the pain in her eyes, her emotional scars.
The end scene of Kate and Rick at her desk. So much can be taken from it. Rick patiently waiting for Kate but still a little irked by her going it alone – not letting him in. Gently scolding her with his comments about waiting for his super-hero partner carrying the weight of the world. Letting her know it does not have to be that way. Letting her know they have come too far to go back to where they were at the beginning. He is saying I don't mind you being a mystery to me, but I won't continue being frozen out of important aspects of your life. He called her pretty – aaawww. The 100 coffees – double meaning. Illustrating he has been there for her for a long time. Also, he is owed the coffees – meaning he will still be around to collect. Kate got the meaning, you can see it on her face. She knows she was unfair and hurt him, thus the thank you for giving her space. The ALWAYS – yes, Kate I put your needs first, I'm still here for you, and I still love you. You are worth it. You are worth waiting for. The look on Kate's face after Rick turns to leave – expressing her gratitude for having him in her life, her need for him, her desire to be whole so as to have a future with him, and, yes, her love for him. Wanting to tell him so intensely, but doesn't want to blow it. The sadness at not being able to tell him now.
The end therapy scene. She'll endure the painful therapy for her own healing, but, also, for Rick. He deserves a whole woman, and she is doing everything she can to give him that. A wonderful episode. There is so much more depth in all the characters this year. A joy to watch. (R40)
- Someone very close to me had heart surgery, and trust me, there's a big scar – very long. I know it wouldn't be particularly attractive on any character an actress might play and might limit any outfits she'd wear...but they should in my opinion either have dealt with the scar and shown that she had plastic surgery or something. Scars are mentioned by the psychiatrist...but it can't just be that bullet hole scar — Otherwise, the scenes in Episode 1 in the surgery room were unrealistic. (R331)
- When Castle told her "you got this". That was a lot of strength coming from him. He clearly wanted to follow her but chose what was right for her at that moment. Kate thanking him for giving her space and time to get through it. During that scene I REALLY had the feeling that

she was not just talking about this case, but more so talking about what happened since Knockout and her telling him that she can't dive until her walls come down. He's been really patient with her (actually he's always been) and I think she was thanking him for that, not just on the PTSD. (R332)

This episode pretty much confirmed the feeling that Castle knows that Kate heard his ILY, but he also knows what she's going through and understands that she can't act on it right now. The ending with Kate and her therapist. Again so much recognition. She's so afraid to live her life cause she'll feel guilty on living it while her mom is gone and the killer isn't caught. She wants to learn how to let go but she can't. (R41)

- Some viewers understand what Beckett is going through. Others are flat out furious at Kate for how she treated Castle. Let's face it the hospital scene between them the fact she didn't call him and seemed not to be concerned about not talking to him until Ryan said something about files and not to mention the ILY part. I think that for some reason the writers just rolled over Kate. (R30)
- So far in the story we know that Richard Castle is in love with Kate Beckett. But is Kate in love with him? I know, I know we have the looks, the smiles, the kiss, and the lies but so far we have not gotten a confirmation. (R1)
- I think that she is absolutely in love with him. [...] She knows that he makes her laugh, is very loyal to her, supports her, is her best friend and partner and I would go so far as to say she thinks of him as family. And she knows how he feels about her. The wall is coming down and when it does I think that she will fully recognize the feelings she has as love. (R2)
- She is insanely in love with him. She has been since before they ever met. Her feelings for Castle started with his books and how they pulled her from the difficulties of dealing with her mother's murder. Her annoyance with him in the beginning, IMO, was all about how he turned out to not quite be the guy she had imagined he was, from his books....yet, there was a strong attraction. Why on earth would she continue to put up with him, if not? Yes she did try on a couple occasions to get him booted, but that was out of frustration, not a real desire to have him gone and out of her life. The level of emotion and respect she feels for him, is what scares her. She's run from it as hard and as fast as she can, but she realizes it isn't going away, nor is he. He has gone out of his way to prove himself to her, to prove he is someone she can count on and trust. He has never abandoned her, no matter what she has thrown at him. His character and charm have slowly worn her down and she can no longer deny what she has felt for him all along. (R3)
- She's definitely "in love with him" and loves him (not the same thing)—both of which I think are needed for a long-term relationship. She's been attracted to him from the start, has loved him as her best friend since at least early Season 3, and I think has been "in love" since at least the infamous "Knockdown" kiss. Yes, that kiss was intended for cover (but really, really? were Rick's motives that pure or was he seizing the day?), but I think it blew up in their faces, and Kate kissing Rick back was all about being lost in the moment. Kate's pushing

through some major personal barriers in her life in order to be with Rick in a healthy relationship, and it's hard, painful work. Heck yeah, she loves him! (R4)

- I do not think the character of Kate Beckett would admit out loud that she is already in love with Rick. However, I do think she is still struggling in silence with her subconscious yearnings, and is almost ready to admit to herself. I think she will take longer to admit it to anyone else, particularly Rick. He will probably be the last to hear it spoken out loud. (R5)
- Castle is absolutely, totally in love with Kate. We all heard him say it at the end of S3 but we all knew it before then. In the beginning he was quite the smitten kitten with her and saw her as 'the absolute conquest' but once he got to know her he really fell in love. There's nothing he wouldn't do for her. Watching his face whenever Kate was with Dr Motorcycle Boy said it all.

Kate, deep down she loves Castle as much as Castle loves her, she's just not ready to admit it to herself and is spending every ounce she has denying it to herself and everyone around her. IMO maybe she feels if she gives in to her feelings for him she will lose him like she lost her mother. I also think she probably loved Royce a lot more than she ever admitted and losing him first as her mentor, then her friend when he betrayed her and then when he was murdered directly affects her relationship with Castle too as the hurt cut very deep. I don't think she could face the prospect of possibly losing Castle in one way or another. I think the kiss was a big revelation for Kate. She had had a major crush on Castle long before they ever met and then was surprised by him in the pilot with his naughty boy ways. Castle surprises her even more now though, in a good way, as she knows who he is. He's always there, he's loyal, he loves Alexis and Martha, he's her best friend and above all she trusts him implicitly. I think it surprised her more than anyone when she kissed him back. I think she was secretly as 'amazed' by the kiss as Castle was but again would never admit it. On the other hand she had been waiting for him to make the first move because she never would because that would require letting her guard down. Hopefully it won't take nearly losing Castle for her to realise that she can't lose him and has to be with him. (R6)

- I think that's what is holding Beckett back. She knows she loves him, but she's afraid of letting him into her heart entirely for several reasons: she's been hurt, his history, his ex-wives, possibly the fact that he has a daughter, etc. (R7)
- She is in love and it's a very deep love, the kind that lasts a lifetime. She is willing to change her entire life, her entire being for him and that's huge for a person who's been in denial and a standstill for many years after a traumatic experience. She wasn't pushed, coerced or forced in any way to change.. she does it out of her free will because the prize is worth it.

That final moment is not quite there for Kate but deep down she loves him.. probably for quite some time (at least somewhere season 3, if not even earlier) and she just needs that critical mass to assemble before she can admit it publicly and move on with him. (R8)

- yes, she is in love with him and yes, she is very aware of it! I think she realized it during the whole Demming/Hamptons disaster. You don't break up with a guy for a man you have only a crush on. She didn't want to go to the Hamptons with Castle as "best friends" having a nice

weekend (although I'm sure that was Castle's only intention). To me, her love was quite obvious in the end of season 2 and season 3. And she hides it very well in season 4! (R9)

- Totally agree, she has known for quite some time and now she has admitted it to herself but is not ready to call it from the rooftops quite yet. Her great hesitation is a sign of how deep her feelings are. (R10)
- I also think she understood that she's in love with Castle in the last episode of the 2nd season. I guess it happened as soon as she realized that she is going to lose him — during that very powerfully acted, heart-wrenching scene where he tells her that this would be their last case, and a bit later, when Esposito suggests that Castle may be gone for good and won't return at all, and then she looks longingly at his empty chair. It's clear (at least, for me), that these are the moments of epiphany for her, when she finally recognizes her true feelings, as she just can't ignore them any longer. The pain that she is feeling tells her all about it. And when the next morning he appears with just one coffee in hand, her reaction is that of a woman in love. So as far as I see it, Kate knew she was in love with him by the end of season 2. But when Castle left with Gina for the whole summer, and then failed to call her back in the autumn, I guess, she just buried these feelings deep inside her and forbade herself even to think in this direction anymore. She even started to date someone else, to prove to herself (and to Castle, of course) that she doesn't care. It seemed totally right and safe decision at the time, since even when he did come back after all, he was still with Gina. Things started to be more complicated when he broke up with Gina. When Kate overheard that conversation, her face at that moment was very telling — she was scared. She was scared because she knew it would be much more difficult for her to fight her feelings for him from now on, when he was free again. And there was hope again, too — but this time she knew she would need a concrete proof that it was safe for her to love him — and that's why she starts to ask him these questions during their serious talks, when she calls him by first name ("Why are you keep coming back, Rick?", "And what about you, Rick? Is that what we are?") She just needs to know, to hear, to get this confirmation from him. So when she finally gets it, she already knows her own feelings, she just realizes that she's not in that emotional state right now when she can fully abandon herself to these feelings and truly commit to them, and this is what she so desperately wants. And she's working on that at the moment, she's working really hard and is making good progress. Because she loves him so much and doesn't want to blow things up with him. That's how I see Kate's feelings and self-awareness. (R11)
- She's deeply in love with Rick and she's definitely aware of it since end of season 2. I think, she realized it but didn't trust her feelings then, was then distracted by all the events happening, but as she saw that she could rely on him no matter what, these feelings grew immensely above all she experienced until then and last, but not least, she's heard him confessing his love for her and then she knew that her feelings weren't one-sided. That put her in a tricky position. She knew she wasn't that open and easy to get to know (told him so in 2x24, so she's aware of herself) but I think for to succeed in this (love-)case she knew she has to work on herself (to be one day as open to someone as he is). And working on this with a therapist is (only my 2 cents) a declaration of love as un-openly as she can profess to it right now. But working with a therapist wasn't just the consequence of the life-threatening

events... I think it evolved from "the talk" and was deepened through his ILY (or why else she was going back for reconsulting Dr. Burke after she was declared ready for active duty in Rise?). And in the swing scene I think she told him in her way that she's willing to change for the relationship that she wants with him.

I really don't believe that she's not aware of her feelings for him because if she's able to recognize that she's only with "one foot in" in her relationship with Josh (again, that says: aware of herself) then she's definitely able to recognize feelings of true love. I think that the audience is still doubting her feelings because she hasn't shown them openly enough until now. She first has to learn how to be open. And as long as she hasn't learned it yet completely she won't confess it with words or actions. (R12)

- I would argue, she has known from the very beginning. Maybe not completely, but she has known from the very first episode, she has strong feelings for this guy. She has given all of us, IMO, the impression as Castle said, "she's a little bit slutty", in that if given an opportunity to be with a guy she is attracted to, and he with her, she will take advantage of the mutual attraction. She has shown us, all along, she has not been interested in long term relationships. To be with someone she feels 'safe' with, means someone she couldn't possibly be 'serious' with. He gave her an opportunity to be with him at the end of Flower's For Your Grave, and she refused. Why? Because she has known from the beginning of her strong feelings and attraction for him, but not willing to accept those feelings.

She could have passed on the interviewing of Castle to Ryan or Esposito in this episode, but she did it herself, to meet the man, the author, herself. While I stated earlier, (IMO) he turned out to be different than she expected, she became annoyed with this, thus her annoyance with him and some of his behaviors. She also respected his talents and quickly came to respect him, warts and all. She had and still has concerns about some of his past, ex-wives, and philandering behavior. I think over the years he has proven himself to be honest, trustworthy, even noble. She still has questions about what happened to his ex-wives. Did he cheat, lie, etc? Was it his fault? What did he do, or not do to cause the separation/divorce? She does trust him, with her life, literally! But, she still needs to know what happened to his previous marriages, to satisfy any lingering doubts about whether she can totally commit to him, to a serious (one and done) relationship with Richard Castle. (R3)

- I think Beckett has had feelings for Castle for a very long time, and has been aware of them, at least since the Season 2 finale. In the Season 3 premiere, you see her missing Castle and protecting her heart when he tries to weasel himself in. I think in the end, she realizes that she likes having him around enough to bury her feelings. I also think Kate fully accepted that she was in love with Castle in the LA episode. She knew what he wanted to say on that couch and when she walked away, she knew she hurt him. You can see in the way she looks at Castle on the plane as she's reading Royce's letter that there was no denial there, just acceptance. Not necessarily acceptance in a "I'm going to act on it now" kind of way, but I don't think she was in any way denying to herself those feelings

What I think we're seeing this year (and even in Knockout) is a Kate who knows she's in love, but doesn't know how to be in love. She is so used to being strong and independent, and

pushing people away when things get tough (ie. her mom's case, Montgomery's death, PTSD) that she hasn't yet accepted that part of being in love with someone is letting that person in, even when you're not at your best. Every time you see her begin to let herself get a bit emotional in front of Castle (which will happen if you're around someone you love), you also see her just as quickly trying to save face and pushing him away.

I'm hoping for the rest of the season that, at very least, we'll see Kate begin to willingly let Castle in, confide in him more, and not push him away when things get tough (of course, I hope for more than that, but at very least, this is what I'd like to see). I'm optimistic about this because we know that Kate knows that she keeps one foot out the door in her relationships, and that, as per Killshot, she's ready to "be more" than that person. She just has to learn how! (R13)

- I think, if she did not know Castle, or have the pre-existing feelings about him, she would have allowed herself to be one of his conquest, as he would have been hers too. I don't think she is with a guy, just for the sake of sex, although I would say, she has had a one night stand here and there. I think Beckett has chosen men she is comfortable spending time with. Men who can tolerate her independence, her controlling nature, who are willing to be with her, when it is convenient for her, and I don't think she is with anyone else, when she is spending time with these guys, BUT she has chosen men, she knows she can't and/or won't commit to for any length of time. I think Castle would have fit that criteria, at that time. He didn't know her, and if she had allowed herself to be with him at that time, and with Castle being the guy he was then, it would not have lasted. Either, because she kept him out, or because he got to close. She wasn't ready for him, and he wasn't ready for her, at that time. (R3)
- I really think Killshot was huge in the Beckett/Castle relationship (funny, since we didn't see a ton of them together), because you can just see Kate in that last scene (pre-therapist) thinking "Ah crap...he really does love me and I'm hurting him...I need to work on me." (R13)
- I think part of what has held her back, from men in general and especially from Castle, is that up until now, her whole life has been about the loss of her mother, in one way or another. When she said in the therapy session, after the scene you mentioned, that she wanted to be more than who she has been, but to do so in her mind, meant betraying her mother, said it all.

Castle has been there, taking all the crap she has thrown at him, but when he made his comment (same scene), I think what he was saying, in a roundabout way, is that he isn't going to wait forever, that she needs to get her ***** together, and she was able to read between the lines.

When he commented on missing his partner, and all the coffee he's brought her, he was saying 'I've given enough, you need to step up and give a little. I think every time he gave her a coffee, he was saying, 'I love you'. Just as in The Princess Bride, every time Westley, said "As you wish", he was saying, 'I love you'. This was Castle's way of doing the same. She finally realized what he was saying and had been doing all along. (R3)

- You know, I really agree about her guarding her heart in the first episode of Season 3, and Rick mirrors that in "Rise" when she finally, finally reappears in his life at the book signing. He was pretty subtle, but he stood up for himself (loved the set of his jaw, tone of voice and steely eyes), told her flat out he was angry with her and didn't immediately "take her back" the way he would have in the past. I think that was a big thing for him—he was letting her know he wasn't willing to be the whipping boy. He wasn't petty about it, but he drew a line, and Kate, bless her, responded to his expectation that she needed to afford him and their relationship some respect. (R4)
- There is a scene near the end of season 1, I believe in Little Girl Lost, where Kate tells Will that she finds Castle "interesting." I think that's what it was for both of them. For Kate, Castle wrote these books that she loved. He had this total child/playboy image, but I think she saw that there was more to him fairly early on. He was smart about her cases and he was able to get under her skin in a way I imagine few people are able to. For Castle, I think he was intrigued by Kate's strength as a cop and as a person (ie. her reaction when he told her "story"). Castle is attracted to strong, beautiful women....and when Kate whispered "You have no idea!" in his ear, you could see him thinking "wow...I need more of this woman..." I don't think either were in love.

I've tried to pinpoint the episode where they really fell in love with each other and have come to the conclusion that there isn't one. As I said, love develops over time. I really don't think they were truly in love until sometime in season 3. In Season 1, there was a mutual attraction and that "I like you, but I don't want to like you" relationship. In Season 2, I think they became friends....and maybe a little more around the time of Suckerpunch. But at that point, I think they started caring for each other more deeply, but I still don't know that it was love (other than in the friend way). In Season 3, you can see them falling in love with each other. (R13)

- I'm not one of those members that are in doubt. I think that Beckett loves Castle. I look at the expression on her face when she looks at him and I see it. Do I know "proof positive"? No, but I'm very comfortable with my belief. And, I understand that her feelings for Castle don't have to come out or be expressed to him to exist or to matter. I also think that it's not necessary for all her actions to be "positive" to work within the framework of her feelings for him. Her actions tell me that she loves him, they tell me that she's afraid, that she knows what she wants but doesn't know if she will ever be able to have it or if she will be able to keep it. They also tell me that she is trying her hardest to get to where she wants to be for herself and for him. (R15)
- Me, personally, I believe that she really loves him and I do understand her behaviour, even if I don't always like it or if I would approach some things differently... (R16)
- All of that being said, it is a pure joy to watch her come to that conclusion. Every episode shows how big the void was in her life before him and the little steps she takes each week to become a whole person again. (R18)
- Bringing him coffee, giving him complements, or any inquiry into his personal life, would be admitting interest or caring for him, which would also be contrary to how she has been with

him all along. It's only been in the last couple episodes that she has started to do this, as she is gradually getting herself to the point of feeling like she can commit to him. To say or do anything to give him hope or to give him the impression she was interested in him, at that time, would have jeopardized her safety net, would have compromised the wall she has/had around her. (R3)

- I think she has accepted that she loves Castle. But loving someone doesn't change behaviour and/or relationship pattern you've developed over the last 10-12 years. So loving him and accepting his love for her makes her want to change, not necessarily for him, but more for herself because she doesn't want the relationship with Castle go the same way her relationship with Josh went where she always had one foot out of the door. I agree that the "wall" is this place in her which is afraid to love too deeply, too feel too much, to let herself dive in completely because if this other person goes away what happens to her. But for me the important thing is that she works on this fear, she wants to be able to go "all in" with Castle even if she can't tell him right now. (R19)
- Don't forget that in Eye of the Beholder that she was raging to Dr. Worf about Rick's behavior toward Serena, but still stopped short of admitting her feelings. It was so obvious, but she still couldn't verbalize it, even in the privacy of her therapy session. (R5)
- At the end of Killshot Kate and Castle have their little talk.
What struck me was that when Castle gives her another heartwarming 'Always' the look on her face. She doesn't smile but more like stares in the void knowing that she still isn't there yet.
On an emotional level she isn't ready for any intimate relationship.....yet. (R14)
- I didn't see it like that at all. I saw it more, as I said in a previous post, as her realizing that she has this really great guy who has been there for her through thick and thin for three years, and that pushing him away and hiding her feelings was hurting him. Castle doesn't get upset/morose very often, so I think his mood during that conversation made an impression on her. Yet, despite the fact that he was upset, he still vowed to be there for her "always." I think it was this conversation that made her go see the therapist, moreso than the PTSD. If it were just the PTSD, I don't think she would have brought up her mom. IMO, anyway. (R13)
- Ok this is just my opinion, but from what everyone else said in the earlier post to the more recent ones. I now think that, until Beckett is able to say the words out loud i don't think that she has accepted that she is already in love with Castle. She doesn't have to say it yet to Castle if she is not ready just maybe to someone else like Dr Worf, her dad, his mum, Lanie or even maybe her pet Harley Softail. I think her saying it out loud would be her complete acceptance that she is head over heels in love with Castle. (R1)
- Sorry tyler, but I don't agree. I think she knows very well what she feels and she has come accepted it. The problem is, IMO, she has known (or suspected) for a long time what Castle feels toward her, and his ILY confirmed it. Her not saying anything to him about her feelings, is her way of controlling what happens between them, until she is in a better place to meet Castle on level ground. To come to him, in a position that allows her to be honest and open to being the best partner/lover/girlfriend she can be. Until she feels she is in the place she

needs to be, she won't share her feelings, as she knows the minute she does, its game over and the relationship starts. As the 'one and done' girl, this is it for her, and she cannot come into it unprepared or broken. She needs to come into it, at her best, giving their relationship the best chance to last – 'until death do them part' (R3)

- This isn't just about her controlling things between the two of them. It's her inability to confess her feelings to Anyone. She has not been able to give voice to what is as plain as the nose on her face (and what a lovely nose that is[Image Can Not Be Found]) – not even to Dr. Worf in the safety and privacy of his office. (R5)
- I agree she should be able to talk to someone about it, most of all her therapist. Setting aside your thoughts on the issue, could it not also be because the minute she says it out loud, her ability to maintain control over the situation, until she feels she is ready, is compromised? She is a control freak, and she isn't that way just in certain situations, she is that way in all aspects of her life. It is her way of keeping her life compartmentalized. She compartmentalizes her feelings about a given situation, or person, as well. This way she can maintain control over her emotions, and be who she needs to be in a given situation, and when she is at home by herself, as we have seen on a few occasions, is the only time she lets go. No one can live this way for any length of time without the seems bursting at some point. (R3)
- I think, you're right about this one. She is a control freak. And admitting your feelings for someone, saying it out loud, is giving up control, at least to a certain extent. So, no way you do it until you have the feeling, you're ready for it, whether you think you can control the situation anyhow or you have learned to give up control at least a little bit...That's the good thing about the control freak issue- you can get rid of it. It's really not easy and it doesn't work out overnight, but it's possible. And she has her therapist to work on it. (R16)
- I'm changing my answer. Without qualification, Kate is and always has been in love with Castle. On top of that, I think she now consciously knows, accepts it, and LOVES it. (R18)
- Yeah, we see Kate only in this season addressing her innermost feelings. In former seasons they were there, too, but not shown this openly. Mostly we had seen her feelings as facial expressions then. And if you're not that good doing face interpretations then you missed her developing feelings for Castle very easily.

But I had difficulties myself to interpret his feelings for her in the last seasons,... maybe up until Last Call he didn't really show them openly. And you're so right... Rick is now at the same point Kate was in season 3. He needs to get a proof of what Kate is only indicating right now. And I think she knows that. But maybe she's just helpless how to do it or how to manage that in connection with her letting her secret out. (R12)

- Right now she can pretend that all the time they spend together is friend/partner, but as soon as she acknowledges her real feelings it is all over. They will be together and she is not ready for THAT, which means she is not ready to say it our loud. (R21)
- Ok than i have to agree to disagree with some of you guys, since I still believe than to be able to verbalize or voice her feeling is the final step in self acceptance (tell her cat if need be just

say it Becks, you'll feel better) of her feeling for Castle. Reasoning for not voicing may vary for one audience point of view to another. It could be a pile of reasons since in this department, lets admit it Beckett is a mess.

So people post on, whether Beckett has accepted or not accepted her feelings for Castle. And some argument on why we believe it to be true. Please note that, our reasoning are our personal belief. The true state of her acceptance have not been reveal. (and yeah.. everyone here knows that Beckett's already in love with Castle no doubt about that but does the Becks the character know it ?) (R1)

- Why is it that you're still circling around this question?? The answer to that is so simple: Andrew Marlow did say it's a love story. How come you question that? (R12)
- Clearly a 'yes' for me...of course she loves him. But, she is a control freak, and giving in to that emotion risks losing that control. She can keep Castle at arm's length at work while it's mostly professional, but if she drops that barrier she loses all chance of separating her personal life and her work life. If she did come out and say it, how could they work together? Would she really let Rick attend some of the high-risk scenes they've been too if she acknowledged to herself how she felt? She'd do everything she could to protect him. (R22)
- For me, i think Castle realize that how much he really really like Beckett after he saw her with Demming. But seeing that Beckett was happy with this guy so Castle being a gentleman did what a gentleman would do it such a scenario. But i see him realizing it was love when he broke up with Gina. When he told his mother that everything was fine but he and Gina was not in love. So.. for me when he says something like this i see it as him knowing that he was possibly in love with someone else. So I'd say Castle acceptance that he love Beckett was during poof. We later see throughout the season him trying to say something to Beckett but was always foiled. finally the courage to actually say the words during the finale. He didn't have the same courage to say it during knockdown. But Beckett is a different story, i don't think it is a control issue, because if you have already accepted that you are in love with someone than refuses to admit it because she is a control freak makes Beckett seems a bit manipulative? I think i'll just respectfully disagree on this point. I do however think that Beckett is just afraid of losing someone she loves again. That is why admitting it is so hard, even if she knows she is already in love with the guy. When she says the word out loud and not necessarily to Castle mind you. It would be like surrender. That's why i think she hasn't accepted it yet. But well, just saw the 11th episode a few minutes ago, it seems like she really wants to be with Castle. Just small moments but hey they are getting there. (R1)
- I think Castle getting together with Gina is just the result of him seeing Kate with Demming.. he's crushed which is very evident in his expression so he kind of ran away and Gina was the next best thing, only it didn't work it and they broke up because of the same reasons their marriage failed (i assume) and when he realized it he ended it. I don't think Kate regards saying I Love you (to anyone let alone Castle) is surrendering.. she has not done so because she feels she isn't quite there yet. The swing scene in Rise explains her reasons very well.. she realized that her mother's murder dominates her life and until she works through that no man will have a lasting chance with her, even Castle and that's what holds her back. If it wasn't for that she would have kicked Josh to the curb (in a nice way of course) and sat down

with Castle to talk about what he said after she was shot but because Castle is so important to her (i think she already knows deep down that he is the one and done) she holds him at arm's length for the time being until she's ready. This is why she reacts jealous when Beckett v2 came into the picture with that sexy, intelligent art thief because that's the type Castle could go for and she fears that more than anything else (just look at her face when Castle pulled her leg talking about his +1 for Ryan's wedding.. there was fear in her eyes). (R8)

- Of course, her feelings has been revealed, indeed. But not everyone was able to "listen"/to see! If you still don't see them, rewatch season 3 very carefully and pay attention to each(!) smile she gives him or each look of her in his direction. And if you'll see a significant change in her eyes, then you'd seen it!!

I may even say that she recognized her feelings for him as love long before he did. Yes, he did find her attractive. And yes, he was intrigued. Of course, he tried to act on this attraction. But recognizing his feelings as more than "I just like to get her done" and being interested not only in the gorgeous woman she definitely is but also in her as a person, as a character, that had taken him quite a while. (R12)

- Has Beckett come to terms with being in love with Castle? Has she accepted that she is already in love with the guy? If she has why can't she say it. And that my friend is what Dr. Worf wanted her to admit. [...]And we know that Beckett does love Castle. Why wont she say it? My personal opinion is that if she ever does say it, admit to her feelings for Castle, it means —-> "the wall is down". (R1)
- I think Serena just gave him the kind of boost he needed to keep waiting for Kate. She confirmed that it was obvious to her that Rick was "claimed" by Kate. And he is happy about that

The whole episode was about them being in a relationship without being in a relationship. But I think Castle's character was very happy to get affirmation from outside his immediate circle. Especially since his mother was encouraging him to play the field. (R21)

- I don't think Kate regards saying I Love you (to anyone let alone Castle) is surrendering.. she has not done so because she feels she isn't quite there yet. The swing scene in Rise explains her reasons very well.. she realized that her mother's murder dominates her life and until she works through that no man will have a lasting chance with her, even Castle and that's what holds her back.

If it wasn't for that she would have kicked Josh to the curb (in a nice way of course) and sat down with Castle to talk about what he said after she was shot but because Castle is so important to her (i think she already knows deep down that he is the one and done) she holds him at arm's length for the time being until she's ready.

This is why she reacts jealous when Beckett v2 came into the picture with that sexy, intelligent art thief because that's the type Castle could go for and she fears that more than anything else (just look at her face when Castle pulled her leg talking about his +1 for Ryan's wedding.. there was fear in her eyes). (R333)

- I think she's madly in love with him. I think she was going to tell him that she loved him in the finale of season 2. The look on her face when Castle leaves with his ex wife is total heartbreak. She has loved him for quite a while in my opinion. You also see it whenever Castle is in danger like in 3XK or Cops & Robbers. I think Castle even knows she's in love with him. Some of his looks after he catches her glances... he knows. But he also knows that it will never move past that until she puts her baggage behind her. Man! Could she possibly be any more adorable?! I for one love this! I love the 3 steps forward, 1 step back... I love being teased and I love the building tension! (R23)
- Although I think Beckett has known for a long time she is in love with Castle. Her fears about his history, her fears about her own past and baggage, the list goes on, have prevented her from letting it surface. I think the therapy is helping her put her life, her expectations, her fears into perspective, ultimately allowing herself to accept what has always been there, and the ability to open herself to a life and love she either never thought possible or only dreamed of. She had become cynical, and pessimistic about love and what life was about for herself, and Castle came along and threw it all out the window. Just as the Mayor stated, Castle has a stubborn streak of optimism, an openness and honesty, which helped Kate realize her life could be different. The therapy will help her to let go of her fears and open to the love and a life that only Castle can offer her, and allow her to be the person she wants to be and available to a relationship she can invest wholly and completely in with Castle. (R3)
- I hadn't thought about that scene in those terms before, but you just might have something there. I hadn't thought about how Castle might have interpreted her comment as what she had gleaned from any behavior or comments coming from Kate. I had only interpreted her comments as an observation about how C/B had interacted with each other, or maybe something lacking in Castle's behavior toward herself, but I think maybe your interpretation might have more merit. (R3)
- First, I do not think Beckett was in love with Castle at the end of Season 2. I think she finally acknowledged that there was something there more than just co-worker/friend. In my mind a lot of the dynamics in their interactions that season were about Beckett refusing to admit that she was interested in Castle at all. But when faced with the idea of him no longer being around, she was going to put aside her worries about whether or not it could actually work and ask him out. I definitely do not think she was getting ready to say "I love you" when Gina walked in. I think it was going to be more like "I have really enjoyed working with you, and I think we both need to stop pretending it is only work. How about we go on a real date and see what happens." Second, I agree that at this point Beckett and Castle are both definitely in love. But they are both worried about it exploding in their faces. There is a lot of baggage on both sides, plus the secrets. I continue to think the reason there has not been any real advances in the "physical expression" is because they (mainly Beckett since the ball is definitely in her court at this point) are afraid of getting consumed in the passion of the relationship before she is ready to accept the emotions. Of course I think we are going to see them work through this stuff in the next ten episodes, so I expect some verbal declarations and definitely kissing by the end of this season. But yes, I agree that the frustration should be getting to Beckett in a big way. We have gotten to see adoring looks and secret smiles, but I would love to see some kind of strain against the passion. She is hiding so much of what she

is going through internally from Castle and her friends that it is in turn being hidden from the audience. Hopefully it is time for another scene with the therapist. Now, when do I think Beckett really fell in love with Castle? I think Castle was actually in love with Beckett around the middle of Season 3 and Beckett followed a little after. A lot of their relationship development through the series really has been about growing as friends and partners. The fact that there was underlying attraction and passion is what kept the possibility of a romantic relationship alive the whole time. But just because you decide that someone is more awesome than anyone you have ever dated doesn't mean you are already in love with them. I think "To Live and Die in LA" sealed the deal for Beckett. When she got back to NY after that trip with Castle, she was ready to break it off with Josh and go for it with Castle. (R21)

- Actually the fact that she hasn't just kissed the guy makes it more realistic for me. Once she does that, she'll be over the edge and gone with no chance of reeling herself back in. Remember, that wall is there to keep her safe from all manner of hurt. She built that wall because the loss of her mother was too much for her to bear. She "never wanted to hurt like that again". The fact that she could, while undercover, in an extremely dangerous situation for herself and her team, while supposedly exclusive with another man, kiss Castle and forget all of the first part of this sentence for a moment, must make her think twice, three times about initiating physical contact.

And besides, the physical stuff is I believe, not on her radar right now. I know that sounds like it's impossible but I think it's true. Her therapy is intense, her job is intense, her life is intense. I really truly don't think she's looking for more intense – she's looking for comfort food not spicy tacos. And once she starts with Castle, it's going to be intense, that one kiss proved that.

She's also had physical relationships before that carried little more than a He's-a-nice-guy vibe for her. She doesn't want that this time and I believe she's already feeling much more for Castle. She says it plain as day that she wants more. To tell the truth, with this wall coming down, I think one of the side effects is she finally moved past the high school/college mindset regarding personal relationships that she's been stuck in since her mom died. It's easy to do the physical stuff and not connect your heart.; make them disposable It's passion without promise and to me a baser form of human interaction; the stuff of college hookups and partying. It takes more (the more she wants to be) to connect physical to the heart, to take the chance and do the work to make it stick. (R17)

- Yoga! (remember how she open the door to Castle, all hot and sweaty 😊 Kickboxing Morning workout ...and if all else fails, meditation. You have seen the buddha head in the entryway haven't you. If she does Yoga, there's a pretty good chance she does a bit of meditation, as well. (R334)
- You really think they should've already done "it"? You really see frustration in either of them?? Actually, I can't. And why being so impatient with all of where and when this story is going? (R12)

- It's all a matter of perspective. If they were both single, into each other and totally emotionally available and stable, then I think you're right that it would be unrealistic for them not to have 'made the move' yet. However, this isn't the case, for many reasons that have been addressed already, including (but not limited to): 1. Kate's obviously quite emotionally unstable and unavailable and is afraid of truly loving somebody. 2. Kate is obsessed with solving her mothers' murder. 3. Castle's got a family and an ex-wife, which complicates matters. (R24)
- In Castle's case, IMO, in the very first episode of the first season and at the end, he made his first move, she made it clear she wasn't going to let it happen, yet she didn't exactly say NO. I think for Castle, having a woman refuse his advances is not normal, yet he was smitten. He pursued her, in part because of his fascination with a woman that was unlike most of the other women in his life, and because she became a challenge for him. He would pursue her until she gave him an absolute NO. [...] I think if Castle didn't find Beckett as fascinating as he did/does and realize at some point (whenever that might have been) that it has become more than just fascination, he would have given up on her long ago, and let her go. I think if Beckett had given him an absolute NO, he would be gone. IMO, Castle's defiant optimism, and Beckett's slow dance with him and never saying NO, is part of why this has dragged on for so long, and in RL could be plausible. But to let it go on much longer, as others have said, especially now that both have figured out and accepted their individual feelings for the other, and not act on it would not be plausible. Even though Kate has yet to clearly state her feelings for him, he knows. (R3)
- Beckett is in a much better place thanks to her therapy. There are no SOs around. We just need Beckett to decide she is ready and make a move. (R21)
- It is definitely looking promising! I don't want to get my hopes up, but everything seems to be coming to a 'crescendo' in their relationship. They're not as antagonistic around each other, they're both becoming more emotionally available and warm to one another (R24)
- I'm not sure about the other stuff but on this part i have to respectfully disagree on. Because i don't see her as spoiled in anyway but instead as proud and independent. Seems like she doesn't realize that it's okay to ask for help sometimes (even for a strong independent woman). Thus the shrink is a healthy direction for the character. And emotion doesn't works on a timeline as much as you want to be better not have PTSD and remove the wall etc etc etc. it's not something you can control (although in this case it is AM controllable). I don't think it's selfish or spoiled to want to heal yourself and get better before moving forward. It would be selfish to expect someone to wait for you, but i don't see that in Beckett. She was willing to let Castle go and be happy with Serena, putting his happiness before her own, nope not spoiled behavior at all far from it in fact. (R1)
- After thinking about it, on this part, tyler, I agree with you. It's more a being strong, proud and independent thing than an only child thing. Sometimes, depending on how your life is, oldest siblings show that or a similar behavior, too, because you're used to be "the boss", to take care of things, especially when there is a greater age difference... (R16)

- It's my belief the problem comes when Beckett keeps using the excuses of the past as a way to put up more roadblocks instead of healing. Serena Kaye is a perfect example in fact. She's still using Castle's past against him, using that as an excuse for not taking the chance because she's still hiding behind that wall, a wall constructed because of a trauma yes, but constructed *of* the worst of her proud, stubborn, selfish behavior. In EYE, it's her wall that's the problem really, not Castle's past because if she were as proud and independent and sure of herself as I'm-a-Cop Beckett promotes herself to be, then a little thing like Serena wouldn't phase her. (There's an interesting contrast to Nikki Heat there that I have to think about. Hmm...) And you're right, Beckett did give Castle the option (how noble) to take Serena's offer. But we all know, as does Castle and Beckett too, that Serena was never any real threat. Castle was enthralled by another smart person who happened to be a woman, but his devotion to Beckett never strayed and hasn't strayed. If Beckett felt threatened because that smart, independent person happened to be a woman, then she isn't as much the strong, proud, independent woman she makes herself out to be. She talks the talk, but she doesn't walk the walk. She hides behind her cop persona as a way of convincing whomever she's talking to that her choices/behavior are warranted. (And maybe she's trying to convince herself too). How many times did we hear "I'm a cop" as an excuse for her behavior. It's almost like a mantra. It's an underlying theme of the show – *no one* is who they say they are, who they present themselves to be. The same theme came up in DIAL, this time from another supposedly confident, independent and definitely proud female – the attorney who fled the scene. To paraphrase – "Don't you know who I am I'm XYZ. I don't get caught up in 123. I don't deserve to be judged as this because I present myself as that." It was a dodge, an attempt to avoid responsibility for the choices made. Beckett's been "saying" that for years! I love her.

I get what she's going through and I think the progress she's made is wonderful. And in fact, I'm probably more proud of her than many because I seem to be judging her so harshly; I can see just how far she's come. But I'm not afraid to say that there is part of her personality that gets in the way of her own progress and that part of her is what is frustrating to me. When I put her at her kitchen sink, when I get inside her head, I get it, I get all the choices, all the reasons, I get why she is like she is. But that doesn't make her 100%-lily-white-not-responsible-for-a-good-part-of-her-own-suffering. She could have handled a number of things differently that may have made things easier on her (and Castle). But again, it's not in her nature to do that. Her nature is, to my mind, a bit selfish, as all independent-minded people I think are. Only recently have her choices started to take into account anyone but herself. It's a continuum, like I said, and my tolerance is just different, I guess. (R17)

- I think in many ways, this is a disagreement about world-view and the nature of agency and choice. The difference between agency and choice is interesting, agency is the ability to make a choice, and I think that's important here. Since the beginning, Castle has chosen to keep coming back, to keep following Beckett, and though she never said that they were inevitable and she, arguably, made the first move in season 2, none of that matters. His agency is his ability to choose his own path, to choose how he acts and where he chooses to stay. We afford that gift to Castle, we laud him for it, and we claim that the fact that he chooses to stick around makes him a good man.

And yet, we don't afford the same courtesy to Beckett. Suddenly, when she chooses to NOT be with Castle, when she chooses a path that doesn't include him, we think she is a spoiled child who can't make the right decisions. That's the thing I strongly disagree with here, no matter whether you agree or not, Beckett has the right and the prerogative to say no and not be judged for that. If she doesn't want to be with Castle or she needs to work through things on her own time, that doesn't make her spoiled, it makes her an agent of her own person.

I think that's where world-view matters and the difference is never so plain than in the distinction I've drawn above. I don't care if Beckett says no to Castle for the rest of their lives, if she doesn't want to be with him, then that is her choice, and begrudging her for that is something I will never partake. Castle has the choice to leave at any time, he has the choice to give up, and we don't and won't begrudge him that agency, but I also think Beckett deserves the same right and privilege. She has the ability to choose never to be with him, she has the ability to choose whether or not her and Castle get together, and threatening that agency, that ability to choose, with a label of 'spoiled' is inappropriate in my opinion.

Ultimately, it is said that Castle never strayed and his devotion never wavered, and though that is noble, how can it be anything other than noble when a woman chooses to be better than what she was before? How can it be that a woman's right to say 'no' is somehow questioned even when the man is devoted? I don't care how devoted, how sure, how awesome a man Castle is or will be, we cannot question a woman's ability to choose NOT be in a relationship with him. I just don't think that's how it works nor do I think that's the way it should. (R25)

- She's still using Castle's past against him, using that as an excuse for not taking the chance because she's still hiding behind that wall, a wall constructed because of a trauma yes, but constructed *of* the worst of her proud, stubborn, selfish behavior. In EYE, it's her wall that's the problem really, not Castle's past because if she were as proud and independent and sure of herself as I'm-a-Cop Beckett promotes herself to be, then a little thing like Serena wouldn't phase her. (There's an interesting contrast to Nikki Heat there that I have to think about. Hmm...)

And you're right, Beckett did give Castle the option (how noble) to take Serena's offer. But we all know, as does Castle and Beckett too, that Serena was never any real threat. Castle was enthralled by another smart person who happened to be a woman, but his devotion to Beckett never strayed and hasn't strayed. (R335)

- To me as well Kate seems to be selfish at times and used a lot of excuses to shield her off from emotions. But that can be a defense mechanism you use without realizing it yourself. And to that regard she seems to be quit out of touch with her inner self. Her job, her relationships and most of all her obsession with her moms case were inhibiting her from herself. To that extend reading Castle's books even were some kind of escapism. Maybe because we do want from her that she also found more in his books but I'm not sure if that sticks.

Living behind that wall also means that every time you see someone trying to peek over it you kick into defensive mode which in a male dominated environment doesn't stick out at all.

But it wasn't her at all. She knew she wanted something different but being out of touch with yourself makes it hard to get a bearing. She would have without Castle but then it would have taken a lot longer and possible may have been way messier because in the end you can't hide from your true self.

Was she threatened by Serena or did she just feel insecure about herself and even looked up to Serena because she seemed to be so much in control with herself while she wasn't? She's not less than Serena and can be self assured proud and independent. Maybe she bites a bit more than she can chew but that's her stubborn side. She's coming around for sure but she still has to learn with her new self. When you learn to love yourself you are ready to love other people. (R14)

- You write in a way that gives me the impression you have a level of understanding or communicating that may include perspectives different from mine, but ultimately I think we are the same page regarding Beckett and her situation with Castle. (R3)

- Hi all – I believe that Beckett does love Castle – pure & simple.

Leaving out the fact that this is a TV show where the producers have an interest in spinning it out for the entire story arc , my opinion is that the situation set up is very credible for the characters as they are developed in the milieu that they live in.

Rick **does** have the background of having been married twice. This carries a different stigma, if you will, depending on your values about marriage – which is somewhat based on where you live. This is supposed to be a sophisticated, NYC kinda song & dance ("Sex & the City?" the works of Woody Allen?), and it doesn't match up to my personal values; but I'm totally willing to suspend disbelief based on what we know. Rick's been married twice – what made him take the plunge? – and he obviously does not share the view of "The One" [I don't either], based on his comments to Kyra Blaine. He's also dated a lot and talked with great vim & vigour about picking up tons of women at various points in his life. There's never been a situation where "Caskett" has really sat down & had a heart to heart nuts & bolts about relationship philosophies in front of the camera; in fact, Castle makes a point that they **don't** talk about the awkward moments that have happened. It's obvious he's catalogued them, and he thinks they are significant. Has it added up enough to make him be committed & stay faithful? Kate's gotta wonder about that. The thicker the armour, the more vulnerable the being underneath usually is.

The people who have said that if Castle hasn't asked Beckett out on a date by now or **forced** the issue violates reality for them: I couldn't disagree more. They are **working** together; if the "hookup" goes south right away, then there's all kinds of awkwardness that ensues. There is some degree of physical attraction early on – she teases him – but she probably doesn't want to be a conquest, and I don't blame her at all. She's probably really nervous about a guy who's going to expect her to stop working, stop taking risks, be really domestic and I have to say that if it were reality that's a very valid worry. Remember the two-parter with Jordan Shaw & her astonishment that Shaw was a mom? I doubt the only thing Beckett learned from Shaw was better procedure. I have friends who say they have to know someone 10 years before getting seriously involved with them; and I myself have long

better part of an organization where, even if I didn't know a guy as a friend before going out with him, I usually knew *of* him. There's nothing really prudent in trying to make a relationship work that's based on a one-night pickup in a bar.

I think Kate is naturally cautious about evaluating whether what she feels for someone means it will work. She was in love with Royce; I'm guessing he knew it, but neither of them ever said it. He may not have reciprocated; if he did, he was prudent enough to realize that was a no-no professionally all the way down. And I'm guessing she looked at it as objectively as she could and realized that it wouldn't work, and was probably driven by him being the "one who understood" about her mom's death. I can't imagine most of her boyfriends in her early 20s *did* understand – probably, if they knew, would have had all kinds of nasty and offbase things to say, and dismissed it as something they didn't want to deal with.

Castle's willing: this is one of the things about The Real Thing: you have to be willing to pay the price. I think Beckett knows deep down that Castle will never respect anyone who isn't a challenge; I don't think she's gaming him, but I think she trusted him enough to reveal that bit about herself in "Rise" that is giving him hope now. I think she's afraid to be vulnerable with a partner; it's one thing to ride motorcycles & have fun, but forever? You want someone who knows you deeply *and accepts what they know*. (R26)

- *** Beckett is selfish because she uses her mum and the wall as an excuse time after time. Sorry I really cannot agree to this. When it comes to your own personal emotion how is it selfish? If you cannot let someone into your heart than it's not something that you can force. Doesn't really matter what her reason is to be honest (In Beckett case it's her Mum=Wall). From Beckett's character perspective what if she never gets better, it was the kinder choice to ask him to go. But Castle chooses to stay and wait out of his own free will. (Lets agree to disagree if your consensus is still firm on Beckett is selfish). (R1)
- On the otherhand the rest of the episode was Great, Loved it. I could see Kates pain when she started see the flashes of "Sniper Scopes" Had me thinking this was going to be one heck of a tough ride! (R60)
- Really loved the episode and almost everything has been said. Just wanted to add thoughts or maybe elaborate on them. Loved the looks between Castle and Esposito...even the whispered "thank you" to Esposito at the elevator when Castle and Beckett stayed behind. And when Beckett more or less "came back" at the coffee house – the look on Castle's face was pure love, to me! (R62)
- Stana Katic, wow. She showed us a woman at her worst and her best. Less afraid to be vulnerable with Castle in the beginning of the epi. Then she plays the BAMF to a tee in interrogation and on that rooftop. The non-reaction to Castle's tearful plea in the apartment scene captures the worst of Beckett. So myopic still that she can't accept what he's offering. Perhaps in this episode more than any other, she showed us so many of the layers and colors to the character of Beckett. The expressiveness of her face, her ability to shed tears that hurt to watch, and the way she transformed Beckett in that end scene was just stunning to watch. She dropped all of the Beckett hard edges without dropping the essence of Beckett. Katic displayed beautifully what we see so little of in female characters on TV or in the movies. A

strong, flawed, driven, and in the end self aware, tender, loving, actual woman. Just stunning to watch. (R336)

- When I say devoted, I'm not talking about him being in love with her. I'm talking about him being true to their friendship and the respect he has shown her as a cop and as a woman. She simply did not afford him that same respect IMO. (R337)
- I'm optimistic about this because we know that Kate knows that she keeps one foot out the door in her relationships, and that, as per Killshot, she's ready to "be more" than that person. She just has to learn how! (R13)
- I felt really bad for Castle, but was glad to see that he was smart enough to know that he wasn't the one who could help her. (R338)
- And the end the therapist asking her if she was ready to move on, I was so screaming at the screen! "YES!" And then... "Yeah, I think I am" I laughed and cried and then I died. (R61)
- Actually if u think about it even castle could not admit his feelings for kate to martha in knockout. He was struggling a lot there. But later on when he thought she was dying, he admitted to her. Should we also think that kate would admit her feelings to castle in a similar way? That is when he is shot and dying? I hope it does not come to that!!! (R20)
- But then I stick her at the kitchen sink doing her dishes, get a grasp of her motivations and remember that I am not Castle. So I stick Castle at his sink, get a hold of what he's going through why he is giving her the reins and feel much better. (R17)
- I certainly got a little satisfaction out of the chapter 10 love scene in terms of imagining Castle and Beckett in that scenario. And I can't wait to see how they handle Heat and Rook's relationship in the next book. I think Nicki Heat danced the line really well in the book. She went all the way with Rook, but then put some distance between them to keep him guessing, and then took more steps back toward him at the end of the book. I could imagine a similar scenario with Beckett and Castle... (R34)
- This is a TV show where we know that :a) Beckett will get better. And..... b) Castle and Beckett will be together...Hopefully in a timeline where we all can be happy with, and hopefully before watching the show causes involuntary nausea . (R1)
- I think something big will happen, but afterward, they realize they need to back up a bit and procede slowly, figuring things out as they happen. Keeping it honest and true to who they both are. (R339)
- I'm really looking forward to the changing dynamic between Castle and Kate when they do get together(eventually). I honestly think the relationship will work very well because they are soul mates, they've spent so much time getting to know each other properly and have gone through so much together. Like any relationship they will have their moments of

tension and ups and downs but it will be interesting to see how they both grow together as a couple. I don't see the 'Moonlighting Curse' being an issue here. (R6)

- I think there'll be definitely a crisis of some sort concerning Castle (not so heavy as a bullet to his chest i believe) which forces her hand to come clean and what comes out of that and how it plays out is anyones guess.. personal theory is that it may happen during the big two parter later in the season which once again seems to be a huge threat much like the dirty bomb in season 3 (and Marlowe has already hinted that secrets were going to be spillt this season). (R8)
- I actually expect a lot of movement in the Beckett/Castle relationship during the rest of this season. We have eleven more episodes, and everything is finally starting to fall into place. (R21)
- So far the only physical contact they have had is the odd hand-holding incident and a couple of nudges, apart from the 'undercover kiss'. I think we could chance a hug soon (gosh, don't want to rush them or anything!) but a hug can be less intimate depending on the circumstances, and I think we really need one. (R46)
- It wouldn't be terrible at all! My point is that I don't think we'll get a kiss until they are ready to go the whole hog on the relationship - unless we get a heat-of-the-moment can't-stop-themselves and then Beckett runs a mile in panic scenario - which I would hate. That would stall the ship a bit longer, but I wouldn't put it past AM to go this way. (R340)
- Also, I can see how much sh** is going to hit the fan once Castle's secret comes out to Beckett now that she's willing to move on and let go of her mom's murder/the past. (R59)
- And who knows now that kate is completely ready to dive in, she may start bringing him coffee. I was completely satisfied by the final scene with the therapist. (R20)
- IMO this scene confirmed that. Therefore I really don't think it will too much of a big deal once she confesses that she heard it. (R41)
- I am one of the younger Castle viewers and I have got to say that I am not at all bored with Caskett. I want Caskett together as much as the next person but I am not going to dwell on it every single episode left of Season 4. If and when Castle and Beckett get together I want them to be committed to one another. I want Castle and Beckett to be open with one another. I am young and naive and don't have the strongest thoughts when it comes to Caskett. I think that the younger viewers are content with where Caskett is at this point. How can Beckett and Castle move forward when they have two secrets out there? Their secrets have to come out, bottom line. (R52)

Niet begrijpen van de gevoelens van een karakter

- A hug on the pier looking over the water where they almost die.. It just seems like they(TPTB) won't even go there for some reason. It's a hug. They save each-others lives for the love of... Kate saying thank you. Anyway, Probably not the right thread or topic..but one thing that caught my attention... Kate keeps calling Rick "Castle".. when Esposito came up all sarcastic about him not not knowing what is going on. she went right to "i'm sorry javi" ugg are you kidding me.. Castle keeps saving her life they are supposed to be in love and never once does she say Rick.. To intimate i guess.. (R47)
- It won't work, the show will fail and will be cancelled and that would make me sad as I really do enjoy all of the characters and so much of the writing etc. I am still grasping at the hope that Beckett's comment about "Sophia told a lot of lies" really does mean that she did not take Sophia's speech to heart but it just doesn't feel that way to me. I sure hope that I am 100% wrong about all this but I guess we'll just have to wait and see (R49)
- I agree but I'm getting bored with them doing so only in subtext so the characters themselves can keep avoiding the actual subject. That's what leaves it to interpretation and it shouldn't. (R29)
- When your mother refers to another person in your life as your better half, you are in a relationship. But we do not see any evidence of it besides the looks, innuendos and comments by other characters. I have no idea where the show goes from here, and right now, I no longer care. (R50)
- But we also know Castle wasn't the only 'friend' she ignored. She hadn't been in touch with Lanie either. I guess I'll never understand the mentality or motivations or someone that could shut out their friends and then suddenly when they need something from their friend, want things back like they were before. Makes me wonder if she would EVER have contacted him had she not needed that info about the money trail. (R341)
- Let me ask you something Southrnbygrace, do you think Beckett can read Castle fairly well? What I mean is this, can she just look at him and know what he is thinking without having to ask? If she can, do you think she caught on to just how hurt he was in the hospital room when she claimed she didn't remember? If you answer yes to any of those, then what kind of pressure do you think they she would have faced had she actually admitted to remembering? He would know that she knows he loves her, he has said it, and now she is having to deal with her being shot and being with Josh. How do you honestly think that ends? (R25)
- Because it could be at this point she does care about him and like him, like him. But does she love him right back? (R1)
- Certainly, when they first met there was fireworks, but in love at that point i don't know. That would make Beckett seem a bit strange to me. (R1)

- Just wondered. The risk she took at end of Season 2 was because she thought she'd love Castle and wanted to give it a shot. But by now her love for him should be somewhere at an all-in level. That means also that her physical symptoms of love ,which everyone in love has ,have to be causing quite some stirring with her mental state trying to cope with things during therapy. Where does all that tension go to? (R14)
- It will be interesting to see what happens at Paley Fest. I really wish someone would have the nerve to ask Andrew Marlowe (and others) some "tough" questions. The problem is, the first set of Q&A's are with the Moderator and by the end of that session everyone in the audience is smitten with the cast and crew after seeing how kind and personable they are, especially when they're interacting with the fans. So when it's time for the audience to ask questions, I don't think anyone wants to get up and stir the pot - i.e., make anyone feel bad or uncomfortable. I could be wrong, but I bet that's the way it will go. Which is too bad, because seriously, we need to know WTF is going on. I, for one, would love to ask NF how he feels about his character these days. I'd like to ask him if he's as sad as I am that they've sucked all the *FUN* out of *Richard Castle*, or if he's as frustrated as I am that Rick hasn't had sex in over a year? But, of course, I know I'd never be able to do it. *::wimpy grin::* Mig, we need **you** to attend so someone can ask the tough questions!! (R51)
- Well, I criticise the writers a great many times, but honestly, if I were there, I probably wouldn't crash the event, because on the other hand it's the cast - with Stana in the first place, but practically all of them - which makes me switch to the show after these episodes. It's their event too and they are the very last to be blamed for a failure. So while in an interview with AM I would probably ask until he dumps the table on me, here I would not ruin their moments - not that I could have a chance. (Though, I don't know. I can't stand hypocrisy. So if AM tells how greatly we love to be frustrated, maybe I would change my mind, the hell with everything.) (R28)
- Lol I would do it heartbeat its all in how you word it. Like asking NF how he feels about his character these days and how it seems the fun has been sucked out of him turns instead to "This question is for Nathan, can you go into detail of how you feel about the evolution of your character from this wild partying done it all playboy to a more reserved father figure that seems to have left the more edgy exciting life behind in order to concentrate on being in the precinct with Beckett and solving crimes more? Also as a follow up on this evolution what season of Castle was the character Richard Castle the most fun or challenging for you as an actor and why?" (R30)
- Whamo didn't insult him nor did I overtly tell him his character is boring. The implication is there, if you are looking for it and know what my intention is, but he may all of the sudden start talking about it and go "wait wtf my character has gotten lame" all on his own. (R342)

- For SK I would probably ask her how she feels that a portion of the fanbase has a negative opinion of her character and why she thinks her character has never uttered the words I'm Sorry to Castle. I would also make that sound very polite as well to get her to think, but not look like I am trying to go after her. (R30)
- Heh. I'll give your suggestion some serious thought and maybe I'll get up the nerve to try and ask a question. (R343)
- Sadly he hasn't contacted me yet even though he can get my info through ABC's site. (R344)
- Anyway, I do agree, and what you say makes a lot of sense. The ultimate way for the ratings to come back is for there to be a hook-up of some kind, but the message I kind of got - and a lot of others picked up on - was that AM was trying to use Sofia to prove a point about what getting together can do to a relationship. That it can ruin the spark if C&B get together like Sofia and Castle did back in the day. But I am 100% sure that AM and co can write a better relationship than this so-called moonlighting curse. But time is running short, and I think between now and the end of the season is the best opportunity to use that power-up and get the ratings up before the end of the season (R27)
- It wouldn't be terrible at all! My point is that I don't think we'll get a kiss until they are ready to go the whole hog on the relationship - unless we get a heat-of-the-moment can't-stop-themselves and then Beckett runs a mile in panic scenario - which I would hate. That would stall the ship a bit longer, but I wouldn't put it past AM to go this way. (R345)
- And AM's supposed point that if Castle and Beckett had gotten together too soon they would have ended up like Sophia/Rick.....they passed that point more than a season ago. Give us something like a real relationship and the ratings will go up! It's not that hard. (R346)
- I fear that AM's purpose now is to kill Caskett, (Sophia's speech), not move it forward. He seems to think consumating the relationship will kill the show (Moonlighting curse) so his only alternative is to kill the relationship, have C&B move on, and then refocus the shows on the cases. (R49)
- I agree with JN's original post, completely. I do not know of any women at work in the 18 - 49 age group who are fans of the show. I do not any young people who conduct their romantic lives the way Caskett is depicted. For someone who says they want to do things in an organic way, this has now become the least organic TV show on any network. (R50)
- I'm so bummed about the direction the show has taken. The fun, exciting, and yes, often titillating show I once enjoyed so much is now bordering on tedious for me. It makes me sad. (R51)
- It will be interesting to see what happens at Paley Fest. I really wish someone would have the nerve to ask Andrew Marlowe (and others) some "tough" questions. The problem is, the first set of Q&A's are with the Moderator and by the end of that session everyone in the

audience is smitten with the cast and crew after seeing how kind and personable they are, especially when they're interacting with the fans. So when it's time for the audience to ask questions, I don't think anyone wants to get up and stir the pot - i.e., make anyone feel bad or uncomfortable. I could be wrong, but I bet that's the way it will go. Which is too bad, because seriously, we need to know WTF is going on. I, for one, would love to ask NF how he feels about his character these days. I'd like to ask him if he's as sad as I am that they've sucked all the *FUN* out of *Richard Castle*, or if he's as frustrated as I am that Rick hasn't had sex in over a year? But, of course, I know I'd never be able to do it. *::wimpy grin::* Mig, we need **you** to attend so someone can ask the tough questions!! (R51)

- Andrew Marlowe though I would be more blunt with because I respect NF, SK, and the cast a whole lot more. For AM my question would be more along the lines of something close to "A large part of the community of Castle feels like the show has slowed down due to the relationship between the leads not really happening, to many episodes that simply don't seem to matter the next week, storylines that are almost forgotten until an episode a season later deals with them such as 3XK, and to much concentration on cases that have become very routine and "cookie cutter." What are your plans to change the show in some way to appease these fan beliefs as well as bring ratings back up to their highest levels by enticing viewers to return to the show after they have abandoned it due to lack of interest?" (R30)
- This tiptoeing around Marlowe does on a weekly basis is pretty much embarrassing at this point. (R53)
- Castle's lost my hubby and I'm about ready to jump ship as well. Come on, Marlowe, we need some breadcrumbs!! PL -- EEE—ase (R347)
- I have always said I would love to sit down and talk to AM at length about the show and get his opinion of things that I'm not sure he even knows about, like Beckett and the boys HUGE mistake with the Montgomery coverup and it being illegal. Sadly he hasn't contacted me yet even though he can get my info through ABC's site. (R348)
- When Castle ask her about Serena she lies about not caring if they start dating. She could have told him that it wouldn't be a good idea. A petty excuse would suffice. Tell Castle he's helpful with solving cases instead of telling just Gates. Or bring him coffee for once. Ask him about his latest book if it's coming along. Stuff like that. (R14)
- To capture more of the 18-49 demographic Castle and Beckett have to be more like the 30 somethings who are in a hurry to get into a solid, romantic, familial relationship. They do not want to watch them dance around without that fulfillment. That is more than boring to the 18-49 demo. It is depressing and nobody watches depressing television for long. (R45)
- I can tell only my opinion, but had they admitted their wishes (ie: they want to try it seriously together) at the end of S3 instead of the stupid act to kill Montgomery and put the secrets

roadblock and after it everything would have happened in almost exactly the same way and same pace in S4 as it has already happened, I would be one of the lead oarsman of this ship instead of wanting to bail out. A real kiss would have been probably due for now, but why not? (R28)

- I totally agree with the OP, that the younger demographic would respond to more sizzle on a regular basis, and it would be so good to have a functioning (mostly) adult relationship to watch - it could be so compelling if done well. People want to see how much they mean to each other. We can but hope that TPTB and AM wake up soon, before they really have left it too late. (R46)
- My anger had little to do with them as a couple (although it's getting to be past time for them to be together) and more to do with their friendship (R349)
- Hell, at this point I'm so desperate for a change that I'd be happy if they pulled a "Dallas" and Season 4 was all a dream Beckett had while in a coma after being shot. At least then I could hope that when she wakes up we'd get a "do-over" and things would improve. (R51)
- All that I ask is that you be patient with me she can say to rick. why hasn't kate asked rick come over for dinner? I am surprised that captain gates doesn't have castle take psych evaluation after almost drowned almost shot in the head that he is safe to be with the team. chances are he has studied some form of criminal psychology for his writing career, so he would know what to say to pass the psych eval anyway. I think rick is waiting for kate to make the first move. he has hinted his feelings now its up to kate.. (R54)
- It won't work, the show will fail and will be cancelled and that would make me sad as I really do enjoy all of the characters and so much of the writing etc. I am still grasping at the hope that Beckett's comment about "Sophia told a lot of lies" really does mean that she did not take Sophia's speech to heart but it just doesn't feel that way to me. I sure hope that I am 100% wrong about all this but I guess we'll just have to wait and see (R49)
- I'm hoping for the rest of the season that, at very least, we'll see Kate begin to willingly let Castle in, confide in him more, and not push him away when things get tough (of course, I hope for more than that, but at very least, this is what I'd like to see). (R13)
- As to the character of Kate. I do miss seeing her frustrated some way or another. For me that would make it way more credible. (R14)
- Going forward, my hope is to get some color and background for how she came to be this way. (R18)
- I am hopeful. Even if they don't totally get together, it would be nice to have some kind of open acknowledgement of their feelings for one another. (R24)
- All I want to see is a hug. And there were several opportunities missed in the 2-parter where one might have been appropriate. And a hug only needs to be at a comforting moment, like

some bad news which I know will come sometime soon-ish now that Castle's father was mentioned in Linchpin (R27)

- The other big draw for this age group is sex, or a more blatant promise of sex. I am not talking of people jumping in and out of bed together. That's not what the show is about. But as someone at the far end of this particular age group, a hot scene or two once in awhile would be appreciated. (R48)
- I too though would have liked to see Castle stay mad a little longer. She needs to see her impact on him. Also I think it would have been fun watching her try to win his friendship back. (R2)
- Even he says how ridiculous and how unnatural it is that Kate/Rick haven't consummated their relationship by now. These 2 are both consenting, ADULTS who are obviously attracted to one another, (Chemistry is completely off-the-charts btw) both with needs and neither one is in a relationship right now ... With all the sacrifices Rick has done for Kate, it should've happened waay before now. (R53)
- I agree with 95% of your analysis. But, IMO if we are still here early next season (5x2) looking for the odd meaningful glance, it's off the rails of realism – they won't have jumped the shark, they will have sunk the tow boat. (R95)
- Yeah, you're right, if "not having it done yet" is not realistic in your world. Maybe this is where the frustration comes from? I suggest doing yoga instead or try meditation, it may help. (R12)
- The part of this whole thing that has a bit of realism for me, is that every time one of them has accepted their feelings for the other and made an attempt to do something about it, the other shows up with someone else on their arm, thereby causing the backup and burying of feelings. (R3)

Conflict gevoelens karakter/kijker

- That's something that was bugging me too. I get why she did what she did and that she was all conflicted and in pain and what not. That all seemed real enough but to me the thing was like, after it's all said and done, and the dust is starting to settle, if you really loved the other person back and you saw what you did to them, it seems like you'd feel pretty bad about it. (R350)
- The way she treated him bugged me in the finale too... I don't know. I don't know if they were purposely portraying her like that or what they're trying to say. Bleh. I don't know. (R351)
- Castle has been pretty much devoted to her for 3 years so if she doesn't trust him by now, she never will. So where most people saw growth, I saw her regressing. That may change with the coming episodes, I have no idea what's coming up. But I do agree, that IMO she owes Castle a HUGE apology, and just showing up at a book signing and telling him she broke up with Josh after 3 months of silence, didn't cut it for me. (R58)
- I'm one of the ones that was furious with Kate and I think the character took a step backward not forward. (R58)
- After "Cuffed" I needed a break from Castle because I really had some problems with this episode, so I watched all episodes of "Battlestar Galactica" in the last 3 weeks. After this experience I'm really glad that AWM & Co deal with the relationship issues in a much more mature way. I'm so incredibly grateful that they let Kate confront her issues instead of running away again. Maybe it's really baby steps at a snail's pace but at least it's baby steps in the right direction instead of running away and marrying the next guy because you are afraid of being happy. (R19)
- Because it could be at this point she does care about him and like him, like him. But does she love him right back? (R352)
- And what does her actions say if members of this forum are wondering if she really loves him or not? (R14)
- grapes, why the sinicism? (R3)
- For me, she has feelings and they matter, just as his do, regardless of who knows what. (R15)
- For me, it only means, that some people understand the KB character better than others. It is like in the real world- some people you can relate to, to some not... No big deal. We are all different. (R16)
- After "Cuffed" I needed a break from Castle because I really had some problems with this episode, so I watched all episodes of "Battlestar Galactica" in the last 3 weeks. After this experience I'm really glad that AWM & Co deal with the relationship issues in a much more

mature way. I'm so incredible grateful that they let Kate confront her issues instead of running away again. Maybe it's really baby steps at a snail's pace but at least it's baby steps in the right direction instead of running away and marrying the next guy because you are afraid of being happy. (R353)

- Great question! You expressed exactly why I find it completely unrealistic she hasn't at least kissed the guy. If I'm convinced of anything, it is that the ball is in her court and it's already bounced once ...Two sips of coffee and double digit math ... ohboy ... (R354)
- I said from the very first moment that the real gem in Castle is that the two characters are so different in many ways that it can be a long and winding road to them to fully accept each other and it is much more interesting watching this in progress, than waiting until they miraculously be ready for perfection. I think AM's greatest mistake is that he wants to depict his Heroic Love Story as it is possible to create separately. He thinks that if they work on it together - and I agree that there is a lot of work ahead of them - that would be a less satisfying experience to the audience than if he drives them through all the bushes alone. (R28)
- Exactly it isn't a mean question at all either, but rather a valid one. I think one of the large problems is that no one actually questions AM and co to their faces. Sure we say it here, but we all know they don't listen to a thing we say here. Someone has to dish out tough Qs, interviewers surely don't, because the show is in trouble and we are all very concerned.

I have always said I would love to sit down and talk to AM at length about the show and get his opinion of things that I'm not sure he even knows about, like Beckett and the boys HUGE mistake with the Montgomery coverup and it being illegal. (R30)

- It seems Kate has always being judged because we all like castle and see how he loves her yet she always pushes him away. So this could have been the one time Andrew took Kate to place that people would see her pain and yet be able to understand her supporting the character. Instead he puts her in a bad light over and over. (R30)
- The only thing I don't like is that it puts pretty firm limits on things. Until the case about her mother is solved, that's it. He won't push until it's solved, and she will continue to use it as an excuse. If it takes too long, their relationship could fall apart. (R2)
- It makes her character more full, more complete, but it's a part of her I don't like, the part that makes me, personally, frustrated with her. (R17)
- A hug on the pier looking over the water where they almost die.. It just seems like they(TPTB) won't even go there for some reason. It's a hug. They save each-others lives for the love of... Kate saying thank you (R355)
- That's something that was bugging me too. I get why she did what she did and that she was all conflicted and in pain and what not. That all seemed real enough but to me the thing was like, after it's all said and done, and the dust is starting to settle, if you really loved the other person back and you saw what you did to them, it seems like you'd feel pretty bad about it.

Just my natural expectations of human behavior told me that if she cared as much as they're trying to tell us she does, she would have at least apologized to him later. Not like, sorry I should have been nicer and called and I'd take it all back if I could and let's get together right now, but maybe hey man, I know you were hurting too, sorry I made it worse. Like, I see it and acknowledge it sort of thing. But she never really showed any kind of regret or even awareness of how much Castle got hurt too. (R56)

- The way she treated him bugged me in the finale too... I don't know. I don't know if they were purposely portraying her like that or what they're trying to say. Bleh. I don't know. (R56)